

# World Teacher – Other World Style Education & Agent – Volume 12: Silver Wolf Tribe

Written by Kouichi Neko

Illustrations by Nardack

Translated by bayabuscotranslation

# Chapter 68 – The Adlode Continent

---

— Faeris —

Kaa-sama... it's been long time.

I hope you are fine... but I'm different. Anyway, I'm doing fine.

To stand in front of Kaa-sama like this, was the last time the day that I left the village? It's been more than five years since that day.

Many things have happened ever since I left the village.

They're simple, but I would like to tell you.

First, I met Tou-sama.

In the beginning, he was somewhat cold, but he was just as Kaa-sama said. There were times where he is in 'blaze', but I am proud of Tou-sama who manages the country splendidly.

Tou-sama thought he was hated because he left Kaa-sama, but I properly solved the misunderstanding. When Tou-sama knew about Kaa-sama's real feelings, he felt relieved and really regretful at the same time. That is because he loved Kaa-sama very much.

I have also received a message from that Tou-sama.

'Thank you for relying on me.' He still loves you... even now. I am probably a bit jealous.

After I went to Elysion, I was able to meet my Nee-sama.

Although she is a wonderful person who will become the next queen of Elysion, she is a splendid older sister who warmly watches over me and treats me dearly since I am her only little sister. I'm sure Kaa-sama would want to meet her, so we could have a tea party together.

Other than that, Senia and Melt-san, who are around her, were helping me a lot.

After that, I went to school, and I also made a friend.

Her name is Emilia. She is a silver wolf tribe girl. She is strong, gentle and her silver hair is very beautiful... she is, somehow, a very congenial child. She is an attendant of a certain person. Although she has a slightly strong passion towards her master... right now, she is my precious friend.

That Emilia has a naughty little brother, Reus. However, when I realized it, it feels really nostalgic because he is actually like a little brother. We look like a family... and that makes me really happy.

And... I also found the person that I like.

That person is Emilia's and Reus' master, Sirius-san... He is a really amazing person.

He is an amazing person who knows everything; he is a good cook and always takes care of us. I understood very well why he is the person that Emilia yearns for from the bottom of her heart. And I am also the same...

Just like when Kaa-sama told me that Tou-sama was your fateful destiny, I think Sirius-san is the person of my destiny.

I still can't forget about the night when I was 'kidnapped', and I have warm feelings and feel excited every time I remember it.

Anyway, I also strangely yearn for Sirius-sama, and my eyes will naturally look at him. Kaa-sama... I wonder if you felt like this too?

Now, I have become just like Kaa-sama, I am traveling together with Sirius-san.

I was going to visit Kaa-sama's, grave even though our destination was the Adlode Continent, so I stopped at this village.

Please don't worry, since I am together with these friendly people. It is because I have also become much stronger, and everyone is strong.

"... Have you finished with your greetings, Reese?" (Emilia)

"Yes. Well then, please." (Reese)

"Alright. I'll be the first. Nice to meet you, my name is Emilia. As for me, Reese

is my best friend..." (Emilia)

First of all, Emilia began with her introductions, but when she said I was her best friend... I felt embarrassed. It's the way I am.

I was embarrassed while listening to Emilia's greetings and when she was done, it was followed by Reus.

"Next is me. Uhmm, hello, I am Nee-chan's little brother and my name is Reus. Reese-ane always takes care of me." (Reus)

Just like Emilia, Reus was saying something that made me embarrassed. Unlike Emilia's greetings, he told embarrassing stories like how he eats a lot, or something.

It's not that I don't understand him telling about what's happened every day, but I will surely punish him after this. Emilia nodded, she doesn't mind if I do it.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Not good, I shouldn't forget about Hokuto. His appearance probably looks scary, but he is a very strong, cute and reliable wolf. I felt so comfortable whenever I touch him, Kaa-sama would surely want to feel him, too.

And the last one is my...

"Nice to meet you, Laura-san. I am called Sirius, and I am taking care of your daughter." (Sirius)

...Eh? His words were ordinary, but the air around Sirius-san was slightly different. Whether or not he had made his decision, he was looking at Kaa-sama's grave with an earnest expression.

"From now on, we are going to go around the world together with Reese. But, there is no need for you to worry. Please be assured, because I will always protect your daughter, Faeris." (Sirius)

I realized that my face was blushing the moment I heard those words. What should I do... My face is really hot. Other than that, what are you going to do? Rather than talking about some stories, was that a... pro-... propo-... (-se)...

"Is Reese-ane alright? Her face is red, you know?" (Reus)

“That’s natural if Sirius-sama said that. That’s manly, Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“Auuu...” (Reese)

Kaa-sama... they are my friends.

I am surrounded by my best friend and the person I like, it is fun and fulfilling.

That’s why, please don’t worry, and watch over us.

Someday, I will get married, and show you your grandchild... am I being slightly impatient?

Ehehe... yeah, forget it for now.

But... someday..

After that, the burning sensation on my face calmed down, but I was still full with happy feelings.

— Sirius —

After we finished visiting the grave of Reese’s mother, Laura-san, we immediately resumed the trip, after staying overnight in that village.

It was alright to stay for a few days, since it was Reese’s hometown, but Reese said she was sorry for delaying the trip because of her selfish reason. Although I was not in a hurry for the trip, there were various places that I have already thought of, so I decided to agree with her decision.

After traveling for few more days, we arrived at the port city that provided regular service to the Adlode Continent.

As I expected of a port city, it was overflowed with liveliness. After we finished checking-in the accommodations and left the carriage, we walked around the town, while the focus of attention was gathered at Hokuto. Incidentally, we already used to see wolfskin prostrating here and there.

While browsing through the stores, I came to see the harbor, where many ships were lined up, and Reus was looking here and there with an awkward face.

“Say Aniki, what are we going to do with the carriage? It can’t get on a small ship.” (Reus)

“Yeah. It has already become our house, so I can’t bring myself to leave it.”  
(Emilia)

“I’ve already thought about that, of course. Here, look at this.” (Sirius)

“Aah, that is Ane-sama’s...” (Reese)

What I took out was a referral letter. The insignia of Elysion was stamped on it, and if we show the letter, we would be given preferential treatment to ride on a ship. Previously, when I discussed this with Princess Lifell and Cardeas, they handled the matter very quickly.

“If we show this, we can ride a large ship that can even carry the carriage. It’s a favor from the royal family, so let’s make use of it without hesitation.” (Sirius)

“As expected of Lifell-ane. If I think about it, isn’t this the first time for us to board a ship?” (Reus)

“Yeah, I’m looking forward to it.” (Emilia)

When I first met Lior and Fea, it was because I was running across the sky. That seemed like a cheap trick, so this time, we are going to genuinely travel to the Adlode Continent on foot.

We strolled around the harbor awhile, and when we found a big ship embellished with the insignia of Elysion, I started a discussion while bringing out the referral letter.

The result was... we were easily granted permission. Rather, it seemed that they were waiting for us to come.

“Your characteristics coincide with what we have heard, there is no mistake that you are Sirius-sama. I’ve been waiting for you. Since this was a direct request from the King of Elysion, it is our responsibility to bring you to the Adlode Continent.” (??)

“Aah... Sorry about that.” (Reese)

Reese apologized to the captain with a small voice. There was no mistake that she felt sorry, because they seemed to be forced by her relative.

The departure was tomorrow morning. It seemed as if we can bring the carriage tomorrow at that time, and ride on the ship immediately.

“The ship will bring you guys, as well as one accompanied beast and one carriage. Do you know the size and weight of the carriage?” (Captain)

“Although it is made from iron, it is not too different from normal carriages. In the worst case scenario, the carriage can float, since there is a tool called a floating wheel, so it is alright to be pulled by the ship.” (Sirius)

“...What kind of carriage is that? Well, anyhow, it seems that there are no problems. Please come again tomorrow morning.” (Captain)

“Understood. Also, what have you heard about our features?” (Sirius)

“Although the cloak is the proof for anything, it was written in this letter that arrived earlier.” (Captain)

In the letter that the captain showed us, our features were certainly written, but... it was summarized like this:

‘A black-haired man with a big wolf and two silver wolfkins as his attendants.

And, a woman who has both the tolerance and kindness that’s suitable for a Saintess, with hair that’s bluer than the sea.’... That was what was written in it.

It was not wrong to call her a Saintess, but I want you to think about this a bit. Since the praise for Reese was written differently compared to the others, it was probably written by either Princess Lifell or Cardeas.

Whoever it was, it didn’t change the fact that Reese held her head under her arms. It went without saying that she wrote back and protested about the present situation in a letter, after we got back to the inn.

—

The next morning

After asking the Galgan Company’s branch to send the letter to Elysion, the ship that carried us and the carriage ventured forth into the sea.

While the weather was fine and comfortable sunlight was pouring down, I grasped the ship railing and was leisurely looking down on the sea while feeling the sea breeze.

“Uhyoo-! This is the best!” (Reus)

Reus was in high spirits, shouting loudly at the top of the large mast that stood in the center of the ship. Reus was making an imposing pose on an unstable spot, which had no safety rope attached to it, but there was no problem for Reus in terms of his sense of balance.

Hokuto was sunbathing at the corner of the deck. Since this ship provided regular services, there were other passengers and sailors looking interestingly at Hokuto, but no one approached him, maybe they were scared? His fur was messy because of the winds, I guess I'll have to brush him later.

Reese stood next to me, she closed her eyes and seemed delighted while enjoying the breeze. Because of the winds, Reese's fluttering blue hair was lovely. It made me a bit charmed. If I took a photo of this scene and sent it to her father and sister, I wonder if they will die in agony?

Reese, whose line-of-sight matched with mine while I was thinking about such silly things, clapped her hands as if she remembered something, and threw a question.

"Come to think of it, I heard from Tou-sama that people taking a ship for the first time will get seasickness. Why are we alright?" (Reese)

"You don't feel uncomfortable at the moment, right? In the first place, seasickness is..." (Sirius)

To explain it simply, seasickness is a symptom that occurs when one's sense of balance goes wrong due to the shaking of the ship. My disciples were even training their sense of balance, so the possibility of getting seasickness should be extremely small. Reese nodded many times while raising a voice of admiration, due to my explanation.

Nevertheless, she is a really enthusiastic child when it comes to diseases and treatments. She is an expert in treatment magic. If she keeps learning, she will probably be able to become a doctor known throughout the world. I am not sure what she wants to be, but if she discovers her goal, I will give her my full support.

"...I see, I will learn it. But Emilia seems to be different." (Reese)

"Emilia, is it? She certainly does look strange." (Sirius)



“Yeah. She didn’t seem to be feeling good after we got on the ship, and she is, somehow, absent minded or... look, over there.” (Reese)

Emilia was standing on the other side of the railings, opposite to us. Normally, she would stand by me, but today, she kept watching the sea vaguely, away from me.

There was sorrow ‘floating’ around her, so I left Reese and stood next to Emilia. Reese was doing a guts pose behind my back.

“Aah... Sirius-sama” (Emilia)

“What happened, Emilia? Are you alright?” (Sirius)

“Such a thing is... No, that’s right, isn’t it? In fact, I think I am feeling miserable.” (Emilia)

“Can you tell me the reason?” (Sirius)

Emilia nodded quietly and she began to talk sporadically, while looking at the horizon.

“Our target is the settlement of silver wolfkins that we lived in, right?” (Emilia)

“That’s right. I am planning to make graves for your parents, but I want to give my greetings, above all. Reese is a bit different but, your master is me... right?” (Sirius)

“For you to even want to do that for our sake, I am really happy with Sirius-sama’s feelings. But... although it is my hometown, although it was a place where I lived with my parents that I loved... I do not know where it is. I feel miserable...” (Emilia)

“It can’t be helped. Emilia hardly left the village, am I correct?” (Sirius)

“Yes. I understand that I am overthinking this and being selfish. However, we’re the ones who should lead you... so I am, somehow, feeling miserable. I’m sorry.” (Emilia)

For her to fret over this and become unusually sad, that was the reason she became unstable, since she was worried about being able to return to her destroyed hometown. Even if it’s not a big deal, she was probably worrying

more than necessary.

As for her, it's a mental trauma because of the tragedies that happened to her family in their hometown. It probably can't be helped, since her parents were eaten before her, but this was not something I can say.

Emilia has to overcome this trauma herself.

I do not know what will happen to Emilia when the time comes, but... I guess it's too early to worry. Let alone her hometown, we still haven't reached the continent yet.

Anyway, let's calm her down. When I stroked Emilia's head like usual, her tail was wagging slightly. Since her tail was slightly wagging, she still was not in her usual condition.

"Even if you feel miserable or something else, you have to cherish yourself more. If you are depressed like this from now on, you will collapse before you return to your hometown. I will be bothered if that happens." (Sirius)

"Bothered... is it? Fufu, I'd be unworthy as an attendant if I make my master worry. Erina-san would get angry." (Emilia)

"That's true. Hey, think more about pleasant things, and boost your mood. Do you want anything?" (Sirius)

"Really? If that's so... please stroke me more." (Emilia)

"That's fine. But, do you not get tired of this? I stroke you almost every day, don't I?" (Sirius)

"Nope. I can feel Sirius-sama's kindness from this, and there is no way I can get tired of it." (Emilia)

Since her tail was swinging like usual, it seemed like she finally regained her usual tone. When I looked at the back, Reese was nodding and smiling. She appeared to be satisfied.

After that, I fulfilled her requests for a while.

"Sirius-sama, may I borrow your shoulder?" (Emilia)

"There is no need for you to hesitate." (Sirius)

“Sirius-sama, will you brush me later, please?” (Emilia)

“That is in my plan.” (Sirius)

“Sirius-sama, would you let me bite your shoulder?” (Emilia)

“...Stop it. I will bleed if you bite me now.” (Sirius)

“Yeah. I’ll give up.” (Emilia)

...That was dangerous.

For a moment, I thought of giving her permission, but I was glad that I refused her.

She gave up her request, and when I stroked Emilia’s head, who was leaning against my shoulder, Reus’ loud voice rang out.

“Aniki-! There are big fishes swimming on the other side! It’s amazing!” (Reus)

The mood suddenly disappeared, Emilia was in a slightly bad mood, but she immediately smiled and hugged my arm.

There was a sufficient possibility that she’ll be upset when she sees her wrecked hometown, but this is a trial that they must face, one day. I want her to overcome it, somehow.

If not, I...

—

Unlike the Melfest Continent, there are vast forests here and there on the Adlode Continent.

There were numerous beastkins in the continent’s population ratio, and a large variety of tribes were living there compared to the Melfest Continent. Roughly speaking, if the Melfest Continent had a majority of the human population, the Adlode Continent has more of the beastkin population.

Besides that, they had fewer large cities like Elysion compared to the Melfest Continent, so it can be said that there are numerous small villages and settlements on the Adlode Continent.

It was the early evening when we arrived at the only entrance to the Adlode Continent, Meziluna. (TLN: The name in raw is メジルナ)

Since it was already too late to gather information about the silver wolf tribe, we decided to take our time to rest, after showing the referral later from the ship's captain at the inn. Since my disciples were not used to the ship, they fell asleep as soon as they got on the bed.

No... except for Emilia, I had to stroke her to make her sleep, and I could only sleep after finishing that difficult task.

—

The next day, we left the carriage at the inn and strolled around the town, while gathering information.

The day reached afternoon when we showed our faces at the adventurer's guild and looked through the stalls that held rare ingredients and magic tools. And then, we entered a nearby dining room, ordered our meals and summarized the information we've gathered.

"This is delicious, but I think the taste is quite manipulated because of the spices." (Reese)

"It is not the taste of the ingredients themselves, but it seems that the main flavor is from the spices. Unlike Sirius-sama's dishes, the delicacy here is missing." (Emilia)

"Well, it is different between cultures and continents. The spices and seasonings used are quite different. Perhaps, this is... shall we look it up later?" (Sirius)

"Ooo! Aniki, are you coming up with new dishes again?" (Reus)

"Maybe I am. Just wait awhile." (Sirius)

""""Yes."""" (Emilia/Reese/Reus)

I finished eating while being amazed at my disciples, who responded like children, and then, I decided to organize the information we've gathered, while drinking the fruit juices we ordered.

And the result of listening at the adventurer's guild and gathering information in the town in half a day...

"There is almost no information about the silver wolf tribe at all..." (Reese)

“There are settlements in the forest in the east and the west... but it is merely ambiguous information.” (Sirius)

Although the population is definitely not small, because they live in the depths of the forest, there is almost no information at present.

Other than that, even though Hokuto was gathering attention whenever we walked in the town, there were also a lot of people paying attention to Emilia and Reus. Some of them seemed to be slave merchants, and some of them asked to negotiate with me.

“The Onii-san over there, are you really managing those silver wolfkins? Can you sell them to me with your asking price?” (Slave Merchant 1)

“They are wearing unusual collars. Besides, the breed is also good... so thirty for the girl, and twenty for the boy, how about that?” (Slave Merchant 2)

“Oi, you. I’m not sure what kind of noble are you, but those silver wolfkins are... buhhh!?” (Slave Merchant 3)

It looks like the chokers worn by Emilia and Reus were mistaken as some kind of collar, so apparently, they thought that the siblings were my slaves.

I clearly refused those who were polite, but for those who were rude, I casually beat them and drove them away. Even though they were my disciples and attendants, they were believed to be slaves. The siblings were surely feeling frustrated...

“Eh? If I am seen as Sirius-sama’s slave, I don’t really mind that.” (Emilia)

“If I can stay around Aniki, anything is good.” (Reus)

They acted like usual as always. We gathered information, while some irritating bunch focused their attention on Hokuto midway, so we couldn’t obtain any reliable information about the silver wolf tribe.

Nevertheless, there were a lot of stories in general that they were seen the western forest. Let’s gather information like this for just a bit longer and if there is nothing, we can head over there tomorrow.

“Is it our turn now?” (Emilia)

“Just as you said. Let’s search with your intuition and smell. It is likely that

they will appear from the other side because they are of a similar tribe.” (Sirius)

“Leave it to me, Aniki.” (Reus)

—

Our plan from midday, after we left the dining room, was to go to the slums area of the town. The possibility of getting involved with a foolish bunch increases dramatically, but unexpected information can be obtained like this, and there were information shops lurking around.

Although I brought my disciples across the continent at such an age, I intended to let them learn new things, and that’s why I brought them here. Since there were unique rules in such places, you never get close if you don’t understand them, or if you want to go, never go alone.

“If you go ahead, you’ll see more some troublesome bunches. Do not get close, unless it is necessary.” (Sirius)

“Understood. By the way, Sirius-san, where did you get such experience? “ (Reese)

“...I have learned a lot. We can talk about that later. Anyway, don’t leave me... What’s wrong, Emilia?” (Sirius)

“Sirius-sama, the smell from over there is...” (Emilia)

“Nee-chan, too? Well, there is no mistake, then.” (Reus)

When I tried to step into the slums, Emilia and Reus didn’t move, while looking at a certain direction.

Since sanitation was not prepared for the slums, the unpleasant smell was spread around, but the siblings didn’t seem to be affected, since they were showing serious expressions. Since we were entirely guided by the siblings, we followed after them, while watching the surroundings.

We continued walking a while, and came to a building that was slightly away from the slums. Even if say so, the place we were at was accessible from a passage between two buildings. The siblings stopped and stared at one spot, where people would usually rarely pass through.

“...Is there anything here?” (Sirius)

“Yes. I’m sorry for doing this arbitrarily. However, I am attracted to this place.” (Emilia)

“Aniki, over there.” (Reus)

There was garbage scattered at the passage that people rarely pass by, and Reus was pointing at a lump of garbage. No, it seemed that there was a human leg that can be seen from inside the trash. That person appeared to be alive, because the leg moved a bit.

“That person has a similar smell to us. Perhaps... I think that person is a silver wolfkin like us.” (Emilia)

“Aniki, that person is...” (Reus)

“Aah, do whatever you want.” (Sirius)

“Thank you very much.” (Emilia)

When they saw me nod, the siblings approached that person. The person was a female silver wolfkin, who had the silver wolf’s ears and tail. Her age was in the late twenties, there was no evidence of being roughed up, but she was considerably debilitated due to the slavery collar that was attached. Maybe, she ran away from a slave merchant. She was barefooted and there was blood flowing from behind the foot.

There was a boy, about five years old, by her side, and from their similar faces and hairstyle, it seemed that they were definitely a mother and her son.

The mother and son from the silver wolf tribe were surprised to see us, who suddenly arrived, and the mother hugged her son to protect him, while being alert as tears fell.

“Who are you!?” (SW Mother) (TLN: I simplify the female as mother since it is too long to write silver wolfkin mother)(ED: I think that putting SW for Silver Wolf makes it easier)

“Excuse me, I’m sorry. We didn’t come to harm you, so please, you can be at ease.” (Emilia)

“Look, we don’t having any weapons, right?” (Reus)

“You guys... are similar to us?” (SW Mother)

“Yes, we are a silver wolfkin. Would you please explain the situation, so that we can help you?” (Emilia)

“Aah... I am grateful. I do not know who you are, but I have a favor to ask. Please, somehow, bring this child to a safe place...” (SW Mother)

The mother was relieved because Emilia and Reus were from the same tribe, but her face immediately became serious, and then she was trying to hand the child she held to her chest to Emilia...

“I don’t want it! I want to be together with Okaa-san!” (SW Child)

“No, you can’t! Even if you are alone, you should run away!” (SW Mother)

The child was desperately clinging to his mother because he didn’t want to be separated.

According to the situation, the mother herself realized that she couldn’t escape, because of the slavery collar was attached to her, and she was depending on Emilia, even if it meant that her child had to escape alone.

For her to depend on Emilia, even though they met for the first time, that must be the strength of the bond of being from the same tribe, which was the characteristic of the silver wolf tribe.

Emilia continued to look closely at the mother-and-son duo, who didn’t stop looking at each other.

“...Okaa-san” (Child)

“Nee-chan, anyway, for now...” (Reus)

“Yeah. Well, we are not only going to help the child, but we also want to help you. Can you please calm down and explain the situation?” (Emilia)

“We’re not in a situation where we can calm down. If we don’t hurry, those guys will...” (SW Mother)

When the mother raised her voice, I felt the presence of people approaching, so I invoked [Search]. As expected, I felt five reactions approaching here.

“Reus... which one do you want?” (Sirius)

“The more, the better. Since I’m feeling irritated.” (Reus)



“That way, then. I’m just saying this, but don’t kill them, you know?” (Sirius)

“Understood.” (Reus)

Reus went in the direction we just came from, while I went to the other side to protect Emilia, and the mother-and-son duo. Reus had three, while I had two at the same time.

“What are you guys? Don’t stand in the way, leave at once.” (??)

“I don’t know about that. You guys go back.” (Reus)

“What’s with this brat? No, isn’t this guy a silver wolfkin? If I look closely, there is also another one at the back, right? And she is a woman.” (??)

“That’s good. It’s perfect for the client’s requirements.” (??)

When I looked at the hands of those guys, there was a small tattoo carved on them. According to the information that I got when I was sneaking around last night, there was no doubt that the tattoo was representing the underground organization that was based in this town. It was too much trouble to be suddenly involved with the underground, but I was a bit concerned about few things.

The men were approaching while smirking. They stopped, drew their weapons, and I asked them a question.

“I have a question, are you guys members of [Daughtress]?” (Sirius) (TLN: The raw says 『ドートレス』, it is a Gundam reference. Thanks to Hendri!)

“Heh, you know, huh? That’s right, we’re members of the number one organization in this town. If you understand, give me that mother and son silver wolfkin. If not, you’ll be the enemy of the downtown, you know?” (??)

“The questions are not over, yet. No matter how I look at that mother and son, aren’t you kidnapping them? Is this the organization’s decision?” (Sirius)

“Whatever it is, it doesn’t matter. Before you see a painful experience...” (??)

“Sorry, that is important. I will force you to tell me.” (Sirius)

Honestly, this hooligan organization, assuming they are big and with backings, is not our enemy.

I slipped into the bosom of the guy who didn't understand the difference in power, and hit his stomach hard enough that he didn't faint. The remaining guy approached to rescue his friend, but Hokuto interrupted and easily threw him by hitting him with his forefoot.

When I was done, Reus' side was also done. At the same time as the opening, Reus struck two men with his partner, [Silver Fang], and they were hurled and sank into a building. Reus kicked the wrist of the remaining man, who drew his sword, flipped the sword, punched his face, and it was finished.

Maybe because he was irritated by those men, I heard a sound of breaking bones, but there would be no problem because they were alive.

I ordered him to tie the fallen men, while I forcibly raised the face of the guy I had, who was still groaning, by grabbing his hair.

"The ones who felt pain were you guys. Now, let's hear that one more time."  
(Sirius)

"Gehoo... to do such thing... just..." (??)

"Just answer my question right away. Was this the organization's decision or your decision to kidnap the silver wolfkin? Your life will end here if you don't answer quickly, you know?" (Sirius)

"Gohoo... guhh... it was a request. It was a request that was directed towards us... asking for female silver wolfkin." (??)

"...Understood. Go to sleep." (Sirius)

This time, I gave a blow that 'reaped' his consciousness, and the man was completely silent. After securing the area, we turned our heads, and the mother-and-son duo made a tiny scream, but Emilia got in between us and calmed them down.

"It's alright. That person is our master, and the other one is my little brother. As you can see, they have defeated those men, and since they will never harm you, please calm down and listen to what we say." (Emilia)

"Y-yes... who on earth are you? Besides, your collar is..." (SW Mother)

"This is just an accessory. Besides, please look at me. Does my appearance

look like someone who was treated with cruelty?” (Emilia)

“N-no. It doesn’t seem to be that way. And, you look very happy.” (SW Mother)

The mother regained herself when she looked at Emilia’s smile. She released the child she was embracing and stroked his head.

Yes, I am happy to serve that person. It seems you have calmed down. So first, let us remove that collar.” (Emilia)

“Emilia, I found it.” (Sirius)

“Thank you very much. This is...” (SW Mother)

I checked the bosom of the fallen man, and found the key to the collar. Then, I handed it to Emilia.

Emilia’s hand immediately took the key, and the collar fell to the ground with a dull sound. The mother tightly hugged her child while crying, and they confirmed each other’s safety.

Emilia looked at the mother-and-son duo as if she was seeing something dazzling.

“That was great, Sirius-san. As expected, it is no good if a mother is not together with her child.” (Reese)

“Aah... but it’s going to get more troublesome.” (Sirius)

While sighing, I looked down at the men who were tied by Reus’ hands.

—

When I heard their story, it seemed that they were directly requested to kidnap people from the silver wolf tribe. Therefore, there was a possibility that their organization was not involved. Rather, if their organization allowed it, they deserved to be called a foolish organization.

This town is not a big town, but if you are an organization that controls this town, you should understand the danger of putting your hands on the silver wolf tribe. Thus, these men are basically doing things on their own.

Since disposing them was troublesome, we planned to leave them around

here, but it seemed that there was a possibility that those guys would tell funny stories when they returned to their base.

Although it seemed better to put up a face as repayment for these men, including the meaning of confirmation, it was better to listen to the story from the mother-and-son duo before that.

The mother and her son were hugging each other, but Reese noticed the mother's foot. She went to Emilia's side and asked the mother whether she could treat her.

"Uhhh... I am a human, but, if you don't mind, can I treat your foot?" (Reese)

"This person is my friend, so you can trust her. Since I am also worried about your injuries, will you accept her treatment?" (Emilia)

"Y-yeah. It seems I can trust her because she is your friend. Then, can you please help us?" (SW Mother)

"Yes!" (Reese)

It was probably because she was persuaded by someone from the same tribe, the mother obediently received the treatment.

While looking at the spectacle of the water that was released by Reese's magic covering her foot, I slowly approached them, so that they don't become cautious.

"I am sorry to ask this during the treatment, but you were kidnapped, am I right? Will it be alright to ask you for the details?" (Sirius)

"Ah... yes. We..." (SW Mother)

According to the story of the mother, there was a settlement where the mother-and-son duo lived in the western forest, and they seemed to have been strolling through forest to find ingredients, such as fruits.

However, they couldn't easily find them, and then, they encountered those men when they were a bit further away. The men targeted the child, and it seemed that they were caught because they were outnumbered.

Although the slavery collar was put on, she made a surprise attack when she was brought to this town and ran away, But, the mother, who was weakened by

the collar, was exhausted when they reached this place.

“My child was safe because there was only one collar, but I couldn’t leave him...” (SW Mother)

And she wanted her child to escape even if he was by himself, that was why she asked for our help when we appeared.

We had no problem saving the mother-and-son duo. Although it was imprudent, it was thanks to Emilia and Reus that we got the clues to the silver wolf tribe’s settlement. It was a reward for working hard today, I guess.

As I learned the story from the victims, with this, it seems I will have to go to the organisation’s base without reservation.

“Thank you very much. We will escort you to the settlement tomorrow, so please rest at the inn.” (Sirius)

“Why are you helping us?” (SW Mother)

“Please listen to the details from Emilia. Emilia, Reese. Take care of them.” (Sirius)

“Understood. Sirius-sama, where are you going?” (Emilia)

“Do you mean that we can’t go?” (Reese)

“There’s still something left to cleanup. We have to take them somewhere to rest quickly, and Reus, guard these two to...” (Sirius)

When I thought about it, I came to the slum areas to study the underground society.

I really don’t want Emilia and Reese to be involved, but it would be better for Reus to have such experiences, so let’s not make him do the escorting duty.

“No, Reus will be with me. Hokuto, take care of the girls.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Is it alright for me to go with you, Aniki? Hehe, I got it.” (Reus)

If anything, I would be glad if you can understand about women. Hokuto, who got his orders, went before the mother-and-son duo, and barked, asking them to ride on his back.

“T-this person, could he be...!? I can’t do such a terrible thing! I-I can walk, so...” (SW Mother)

“I understand your feelings, but you are considerably tired, so it’s better not to push yourself.” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Hiii!? U-understood, please let me get on!” (SW Mother)

...On the contrary, she didn’t feel relieve, but don’t think too much about it.

Since Emilia and the others already left to the other side, shall we get to business at once?

It seems that the mother-and-son duo were caught yesterday, and they were probably going to be delivered by tomorrow.

I wonder what kind of faces I will see.

“Well then, shall we head out, Reus?” (Sirius)

“Ouu!” (Reus)

Reus was unusually happy, while carrying those men, and I started looking out for the base of [Daughtress].

—

### **Extra/Bonus 1**

“Lifell-sama, a letter from Reese-sama has arrived.” (Senia)

“Really!? Oh wow... he said words like a proposal. It seems you’re doing well. Besides... let me leave this for a bit.” (Lifell)

“Hime-sama, where are you going?” (Senia)

“Otou-san’s place. Otou-san, look at this!” (Lifell)

“What is it, Lifell? You didn’t even knock. What! From Reese!? Let me see... humph! If it’s me, I would give her more passionate words!” (Cardeas)

“That’s not it. No, that is important, but quickly look at the end.” (Lifell)

“Hmmm... what? We overdid it!? It was splendidly written, but... as expected, you’re not happy with being called ‘Saintess’?” (Cardeas)

“If ‘Saintess’ is no good... it should be ‘Angel’! Because that child is our angel!”  
(Lifell)

“That’s it!” (Cardeas)

“Reese-sama... she’s going to have a hard time.” (Senia)

“I can’t stop them. I’m sorry, Reese-sama.” (Melt)

The criminal was not one, but both of them.

## **Extra/Bonus 2**

One day, it suddenly came to me when I was brushing Hokuto.

Hokuto... can he swim?

And then, I made a demonstration for him, but...

DOBABABABABA—!

A violent splash of water was made, Hokuto was swimming and he was entirely like a motorboat.

Although he wasn’t at the same speed as the real machine, the amount of water being splashed wasn’t lost at all.

However...

“After all, it’s because he’s doing a dog paddle, huh?” (Sirius)

It was a cute appearance, if you close your eyes at the speed and the splashes of water.

# Chapter 69 – The Underworld Society

## Studies for a Silver Wolfkin

---

“Aniki, where are we going?” (Reus)

Reus was probably happy, he was shaking his tail while easily carrying the men who were bundled together.

In the case of me taking separate actions, I usually order him to return together as Emilia’s escort. He was probably happy because I asked him to come with me.

His breaths were rough, as if he was willing to do anything, but I think your turn will hardly come this time.

“For now, we’re going to the men’s hideout, but don’t do anything, and stay behind me.” (Sirius)

“I don’t really mind, but are you going to crush it by yourself, Aniki?” (Reus)

“Ah... it seems you misunderstood something, I’m not going to crush the hideout. I’m going to have a talk.” (Sirius)

“Eh!? Even though it’s the hideout of these guys?” (Reus)

Reus was sending a despised look at the men. After all, they kidnapped a silver wolfkin who was similar to himself. So, it can’t be helped that he would feel angry about it.

However, based on the earlier conversation, ‘Daughtress’, which these men belonged to, was highly unlikely to be related, and I guessed that these guys were the bad ones. It will never end if you annihilate their organization, when only looking at the bad things done by the underlings.

Although Reus can be viewed as having a reckless nature, he is by no means stupid.

As for things that catch his attention, I have to make him understand that it’s not always good to knock someone down from one end...



“If everything can be solved by annihilate it all with strength, it would be similar to being like Lior, who crushes thieves, you know?” (Sirius)

“That is no good! I will pay attention, Aniki.” (Reus)

It is a fact, so I won't apologize, old man.

Even if Reus understood, I explained my intention this time, and told him to observe from behind me.

“It is easy to annihilate someone, but I want you to know that there is more to the world. Anyway, this will become necessary for you, and there is no loss in learning it.” (Sirius)

“Seeing is also training! Got it.” (Reus)

While calming down the excited Reus, we entered a back alley that was slightly away from the slums. There was a small tavern that was built to be inconspicuous. I've went looking for the Daughtress' hideout yesterday.

I haven't entered the bar yet, but we seemed to be observed by the gazes of a man who was sitting on a chair, drinking near the entrance, and from a man who was hiding in one the surrounding buildings. Well, that was normal, since we were carrying five men who were their comrades.

“Aniki... there are two people. I made sure through both my nose and their presence, and I don't think there is a mistake.” (Reus)

“That is correct.” (Sirius)

When we approached the bar, while expecting those hidden people with low voices, the lone man who sat in front of the bar stood up and came close to us with a bottle of sake.

“Oi oi, what are children like you doing in this kind of place...?” (??)

His appearance of unsteadily walking was exactly like that of a drunk... but that was an act. There was no doubt that he was drunk, because of the sake, but I could properly see something reasonable from his eyes. I see, is this a test for outsiders?

“No, no, I have something important to talk about inside. Aah, you have dirt on you, you know?” (Sirius)

I pretended to brush the other person's sleeve, and dropped a copper coin in his hand. The drunk got off my nose and separated himself from me. He sat again and began drinking.

The reason for him to pick a fight was to make visitors feel timid. A copper coin was like an entrance fee.

We entered the bar without getting picked on, but as expected, there weren't a lot of people, since it was late afternoon. There were a lot of tables lined up with several people sitting on them. When we headed for the bartender's counter, Reus asked me in a whisper.

"Aniki, are they really these men's comrades? The people nearby are not attacking us though..." (Reus)

"If they make noise in this place, won't they expose that this is their hideout? And it would be a lot worse if they attacked us here. Prepare yourself, alright?" (Sirius)

"Understood!" (Reus)

Or, there was a possibility that these men were not important enough to make noise for the organization.

There was no mistake that this was their hideout, from the mood of the tavern and the presence of people. Then, I placed a silver coin on the counter and ordered. By the way, Reus was curiously looking around.

"Master, one Daughtream<sup>[1]</sup> and Resslerite please." (Sirius)

"We don't have that in the house." (Bartender)

"Eight Daughtream, then." (Sirius)

"...Wait a sec." (Bartender)

In this bar, there were several peculiar drinks from this town, and they were not listed in the menu among them, but those two were the secret password of wanting a meeting with the organization. Based on the information of the store, the amount of Daughtream ordered played a major role of the purpose of the meeting.

To tell the truth, I wanted to reply with 'Ten', but since the worst was

avoided, I made it 'Eight'. The bartender returned after going inside for a while, and then we were guided by the employee to the back door.

After I descended down a dim staircase, there were several doors lined up side by side, and I entered one of them. It was a dreary room with two sofas and one desk, but I could see several people lurking in the dark and the shade. This made me remember 'Melissa', the organization that I sold the gems of the 'Jewel Turtle' to when I was a child.

A man was already sitting on one of the sofas, so I sat on the other sofa, and Reus positioned himself behind me after putting the men down on the floor.

There was absolutely no disdain in the eyes of the man who looked at me. As I expected, when it comes the inner workings of the organization, they seemed to be different from those fools.

"You are as young as I've heard. What kind of business do you have with us?"  
(??)

"There is one thing before we start talking about it. The truth is we came to return them because we were involved with your subordinates over there."  
(Sirius)

"Haa? Aah... they surely are subordinates. I don't remember them that much. Did they join the organization recently?" (??)

When the man sitting on the sofa called a woman behind him, she checked the paper he had and nodded. She was probably a secretary.

"It is confirmed that they have recently joined. However, since I didn't see them after they joined, I thought they died." (??)

"Is that so? They caused some inconvenience for us, but we deliberately came to return them, what do you think? Will you pay for a settlement?" (Sirius)

At that moment, the men who were lurking around, seethed. Reus reflexively drew his sword, but I signaled him with a gaze to suppress his alertness. You can't act violently from bloodlust level, you know?

"I don't need anything like money. From here on is the main objective. I want to request information from you." (Sirius)

“A request for information? Have we become that low to give information to outsiders, huh? Well, what kind of information?” (??)

“I also want to inform you... that those men kidnapped someone from the silver wolf tribe.” (Sirius)

“What!?” (??)

The man stood up in surprise and looked down at his subordinates lying on the floor. His calm demeanor until just now disappeared. He was looking at me as if he couldn't believe it, but since there was a silver wolfkin, Reus, standing behind me, he didn't think that it was a lie.

“Oi! Wake them up!” (??)

When the man gave the order, the woman that stood by poured a jug of water, and slapped the cheeks to wake them up. That was considerably extreme, but judging from the situation, it's not that I don't understand.

“Aughh... Lea-leader?” (D Subordinate)

“You... No, it doesn't matter anymore. Oi, what did you do to that child over there?” (D Leader)<sup>[2]</sup>

“Aa... aah! Yeah, leader! The brat was a hindrance! We had a chance to earn a lot of money!” (D Subordinate)

“How did you intend to make money? Answer me.” (D Leader)

“It's the silver wolf tribe! There was a guy who made a direct request to us, and he said he would pay us fifty gold coins if we brought him a female silver wolfkin!” (D Subordinate)

“...And, did you, by any chance, kidnapped them?” (D Leader)

“I discovered some, by chance, when I was looking in a forest. After that, when we got back to the town, the female ran away. When we chased after her, the brat over there...” (D Subordinate)

“I had enough. Go back to sleep.” (D Leader)

Far from having the leader confirm, the man easily confessed and validated that my information was true. The flabbergasted leader kicked the man's face

and let him 'sleep' again. And then, he sat on the sofa while sighing.

"Damn it, these idiots are surely outsiders." (D Leader)

"Yes, they are. They arrived from another continent the other day. Could it be that these guys didn't learn about the rules...?" (D Secretary)

"Damn it! Send them away immediately..." (D Leader)

The reason why the leader was panicking was... that a silver wolfkin was kidnapped by force.

The silver wolf tribe is a tribe that regards families and friends more than anything else, and the bond with someone from the same tribe is strong. It is said that once they get married, they will never be apart again.

It seemed that the royalty of a certain country abducted some silver wolfkins that they wanted in the past, but apparently, the silver wolf tribe assaulted the country in order to recover their fellows and family.

The silver wolf tribe generally had high physical abilities, but the number of warriors seemed low. They had managed to fight them with the difference in numbers, and the country was weakening because of the huge amount of damage, and a war triggered again, when the crime of the royalty was exposed, and the country was eventually destroyed.

Since then, to kidnap a silver wolfkin against their will was considered a taboo, and if they walked together with someone, they must have a deep bond with the person himself and was recognized by them as a family member.

That was why the slave merchant who spoke to us in the town said, 'You manage them well' towards me. If the bond was created even when they were slaves, you won't be attacked because you will be seen as nothing but same family.

It was a widely handed down story in the Adlode Continent, but they appeared to have failed in various ways when listening to the conversation between the leader and the woman.

If the matter is left as it was, the silver wolf tribe will probably attack the town to get their kidnapped friends back within a few days, so the leader's

impatience was reasonable.

Since he understood the present situation, I moved on to the next talk.

“I am sorry for you to be impatient, but we have defeated your subordinates for that reason, and protected the silver wolfkin. Can I treat your organization as being uninvolved with them?” (Sirius)

“Yeah, got it. We were actually saved. If you had left them alone, there was the possibility that someone would have given the silver wolfkin to the client before we knew it. If that happened, it might have been too late to send them back.” (D Leader)

“That is true, isn’t it? So, I have a request, will you let me send the silver wolfkin back?” (Sirius)

“...What is your reason for this?” (D Leader)

“The guy who stands behind me is a silver wolfkin. Due to a certain reason, I picked him up, grew up together with him, and now he has become an important existence to me. He is worried. Isn’t that a reason for him to make a move for someone from his tribe?” (Sirius)

My real intention was only to go to the silver wolf tribe’s settlement, but there was no mistake in saying this, since the siblings have already become indispensable existences to me. Of course, Reese and Hokuto too, they are my important companions.

Reus was quietly watching, but he was desperately holding back because he almost cried after hearing my words. However, since his tail was moving intensely, it was a pointless worry.

“I will leave the town tomorrow morning, and head for their settlement. The kidnapped silver wolfkin will be our guide, and she will explain the situation to other family members to prevent the attack. How about that, it’s not bad for mutual discussion, right?” (Sirius)

“Isn’t there the possibility that you will run away with that silver wolfkin? And, it is not hard for someone from the same tribe to deepen their relationship.” (D Leader)

“If that’s the case, it was not necessary for us to come here, right? The reason we came here was to inform you and solve the matter.” (Sirius)

“Even if you don’t say it, I had already planned to do it.” (D Leader)

I came here mainly to let Reus get the experience, but there were two other reasons.

First was to give warning for what I have said earlier.

Daughtress is an underworld society, but they were following some rules to a certain extent. In addition, there was also another side to them that kept the order of the town so that the wickedness from other places won’t be spread here. I thought it was regrettable to be annihilated because of a stupid mistake.

Another reason was to deal with the culprit.

The ones that kidnapped the silver wolfkin were those guys, who were lying on the ground, but there was still a problem because, in the first place, it was taboo to kidnap them, in regards of the Adlode continent.

There was a possibility that the same person will appear if I leave this out, so I should definitely check it out. Since there were silver wolfkins among my companions, it was better to get rid of the weeds that have caught my eye.

I don’t mind doing it, but I will leave the town tomorrow, and I should entrust the matter to Daughtress to regain their honor because they have put the town in danger.

“The client is either not a person from Adlode, a noble, or someone higher who is interested in the silver wolf tribe. So, you have to aim until a certain extent, am I right?” (Sirius)

“You’re right; I will teach and stop that fool as a favor. Actually, I already made contact with him. A foolish noble came in contact with us a few days ago and informed us of his interest in having a silver wolfkin. Of course, I refused him and explained the reason, but that fool didn’t get it.” (D Leader)

According to his additional explanation, the noble was an aristocrat from a different continent. It seemed that he wanted a silver wolfkin to the degree that he came all the way to the Adlode continent. It was unfortunate that he

couldn't understand the reason why that was impossible.

In the end, the noble didn't give up. He indiscriminately shouted for suitable adventurers, and searched for anyone who would accept the request. I thought there weren't any fools who would accept it in this continent, but it seemed that Daughtress won't remain indifferent and they planned to make a move.

"Since he would cause a problem, I thought of giving him a warning, since they would abduct them before long, but let alone not knowing that my underlings accepted the request, I didn't think that they would catch one so soon." (D Leader)

"I can say nothing but bad luck in various ways. So, will you guys handle the noble and leave the kidnapped silver wolfkin to us?" (Sirius)

"...It can't be helped, I guess. When I think about it, you probably don't want to see your companions kidnapped, so it is best to leave it to you, who has someone from the same tribe, to return them. Make sure you deliver them, alright?" (D Leader)

"Please, leave it to me. I will excuse myself, since I have nothing more to discuss." (Sirius)

I received their pledge, so I should leave it to their side, for now.

As we were about to leave, since the discussion was over, the leader threw a silver coin and a copper coin, and I caught them in midair.

"I have a principle not to be indebted to outsiders. I have returned the entrance fee because you have provide me with some information." (D Leader)

As expected, it seemed that his character was someone who settles his debt on the spot. It was worthwhile to give him information and advice.

"There are bad adventurers gathering around the noble that we talked about earlier. Therefore, you should walk around the downtown all day today. After that... you got it, right?" (D Leader)

"I was expecting that, but they are acting swiftly, right?" (Sirius)

"That's how much they want someone from the silver wolf tribe. Good grief, I wish they channeled that enthusiasm to something else. Aah, our companions



are not included, you know? Either way, even if they were, such foolishness won't know what will happen next." (D Leader)

"Understood. Well then, I won't hesitate." (Sirius)

"Do whatever you want. Oi! Make those fools vomit everything. You don't have to hold back." (D Leader)

The debt was settled, and we won't see that leader anymore. As he kicked the men that were lying on the floor, and gave orders to the other guys, Reus and I left Daughtress' hideout.

—

When we left the hideout, as our walking pace grew, Reus finally breathed out and undid the tension he felt. As expected, it seemed he wasn't used to watching things in silence.

"Reus, it is alright if you breathe like normal. So, what do you think about the interaction with the organization?" (Sirius)

"I was really happy when you said that I'm an important existence." (Reus)

"No, not that. Did you understand that there are other ways to solve things other than acting violently?" (Sirius)

"Yeah. It was very difficult for me to understand, but I understood that there are various things that can be done, other than just annihilating something." (Reus)

It seems that the conversation with the underworld organization was difficult for him, but Reus seemed to have learned something. He was walking next to me and laughing while showing his teeth.

"Don't just kill them just because they are bad guys. Unless they are obvious fools, after thinking a bit, I will cut them." (Reus)

"This time, it is enough to understand that much. But remember, the road that you are going to walk will require various experiences. That is why I brought you with me, but there is no need to be impatient. One step at a time. You will learn and grow for sure." (Sirius)

"Yes! I will fulfill Aniki's expectations." (Reus)

Because he was together with Lior so much, he would crush evil by instinct. However, Lior's instincts were not similar to Reus', so I can't say that it was a mistake to crush something by leaving it to his instincts. He was a child who has difficulties in making subtle adjustments.

"But, Aniki. What were you going to do if those guys didn't listen to Aniki's proposal, and attacked us?" (Reus)

"In that situation, I would crush them. There is no need to hold back against an organization that doesn't understand the situation and is greedy." (Sirius)

"As expected of Aniki." (Reus)

"It is different if we are the bad ones, but I won't forgive them if they aim at us for no reason, you know?" (Sirius)

"Aniki is somewhat similar to a silver wolfkin, huh?" (Reus)

"Oi oi, I don't have wolf ears on me." (Sirius)

While walking together with Reus, who was happily wagging his tail, we returned to the inn.

—

We had two double rooms for the inn, but Emilia changed it to a quadruple room. By the way, Hokuto was on standby at the stables to watch over the carriage. I saw his situation a while ago, and he really was a wolf that looked like a messenger of a god. He was also revered by several horses in the stable.

We entered the inn, and when I knocked on the door of the room where the mother and son were resting, Emilia immediately opened it and showed me inside.

"Welcome back, Sirius-sama." (Emilia)

"We're back. We are done. So, how about them?" (Sirius)

"They calmed down after we explained ourselves, and they are resting, since Reese's treatment is over. Anyway, I would like to say thank you, Sirius-sama." (Emilia)

"The ones who found them were you guys, not me. Anyway, shall we talk?"

(Sirius)

When I entered the room, the mother, who was lying down on the bed, raised her upper body, and lowered her head at me. Reese and the child were sitting on the next bed, and they were eating the skewered meats that were bought at a stall. Their relationship seemed good because they were having fun, talking about the deliciousness of the skewered meat. Was this also because of Reese's virtue?

I was prepared to be glared at, because they were attacked by humans, but it seems we don't have to worry, after looking at the expression of the mother and the child.

"Thank you very much for this time. Thanks to everyone, my child and I were saved." (SW Mother)

"The ones who helped you are these two, not me, you know?" (Sirius)

"No. I heard from Emilia that we weren't the only ones who were rescued, but your two companions over there, too. On behalf of the tribe, I would like to say thank you." (SW Mother)

As one would expect, someone from the silver wolf tribe is said to have strong bonds. Even though there is no blood relation, she thanked Emilia and Reus for it.

"I did it because I wanted to do it. Besides, since I am younger, there is no need to use honorifics. Please, talk normally." (Sirius)

"Y-yeah. But, I also have something to ask. Let us stop being formal, alright?" (SW Mother)

"Well then, if you insist. Anyway, I'm glad that both of you are safe. I accept your thanks. First of all, shall we introduce ourselves?" (Sirius)

"Yeah. My name is Aery. This is my child, Quad. Hey, please say hello." (Aery)

[3]

"I am Quad. Thanks, Nii-chan!" (Quad)

I was wondering whether he would be alarmed like Noir, but he made a smile and obediently said thanks. Every child that I met for the first time, including

Emilia and Rues, were all wary, so this made me feel really refreshed.

Contrary to what I thought, Emilia was nodding in satisfaction; it seemed she was convinced about something. Well... is it alright if the mother doesn't say anything?

"I think she informed you about me already, but my name is Sirius. I am... their Shishou." (Sirius)

"I am Reus. Nice to meet you, Aery-san, Quad." (Reus)

When I think about it, I am their Shishou, their master, leader and so on. But, since it was troublesome, I lumped it all together as their Shishou.

After Reus introduced himself, Aery -san turned her sight towards Reus' face. She put her hand on her mouth as if she remembered something, so Reus came closer and waved his hand.

"Is there something on my face?" (Reus)

"Aah, sorry. When I look at you again, I feel like your face resembles someone. If it's alright with you, would you tell me your family name?" (Aery)

"It is Silverion. My Tou-chan was the head of our village." (Reus)

"Oh!? If that's the case, you guys must be Garve-san's<sup>[4]</sup> grandchildren!" (Aery)

Aery-san gave Emilia and Reus a gentle smile, but the siblings tilted their heads, as if they did not recognized the name of Garve.

"In short, Aery-san's village is where Emilia's family lives?" (Sirius)

"Yeah. Garve-san was the former chief of our village. Several years ago, I heard that his child's settlement was attacked by monsters and it was destroyed... but I'm glad that you are alive." (Aery)

While shedding tears, Aery-san hugged Reus, who was drawing closer.

Although it was unexpected, I found the connection to Emilia and Reus. If we go to Aery-san's settlement, the location of the village where Emilia used to live was likely to be known as well.

"That is great, you guys. Although your reaction is light, don't you two

understand?” (Sirius)

“Yes. But, my mother and father never talked about such person before.”  
(Emilia)

“I didn’t hear about him, either. Aery-san, what kind of person is this Garve?”  
(Reus)

“He is a considerable old man. But, it’s probably not impossible for you guys to say that you don’t know him. Garve-san is terribly stubborn and rarely talks about his family, and the only story that I heard about was when he was drunk, it was about how he fought and split with his child.” (Aery)

“He is our grandfather... isn’t he?” (Emilia)

“Yeah... that’s great, Nee-chan! We have a Jii-chan!” (Reus)

The siblings gradually accepted the fact that their family was there, but for some reason, they started to delightfully cling to me. I think that I am also happy that your family is still alive, but it hurts a little when I am being hugged by the strength of the siblings.

“Fufu... they really long for you. I heard from Emilia why you, Sirius-kun, came to this continent. Our whole family plan to cooperate with you, unsparingly, including the favor of being rescued by you.” (Aery)

“We’re saved. First of all, we will bring you to your settlement.” (Sirius)

“Yes, leave the guiding to us. By all means, I would like you to come to our settlement.” (Aery)

“Please. But, since today is already so late, I want you to slowly recuperate. We will leave tomorrow morning.” (Sirius)

“Y-yeah. The present me will only drag your feet. I will quietly lie down.”  
(Aery)

Even if the injury was cured by Reese’s magic, Aery’s physical strength hasn’t recovered yet. In preparation for tomorrow, Aery-san obediently lied down on the bed to recover her physical strength, even if it’s only a little bit.

To tell the truth, she wanted to go back by forcing herself, but since we saved her, it seemed impossible for her to overdo it. Quad also felt sleepy after eating

the skewered meat, and he crawled next to his mother and was breathing like a sleeping person.

Looking at the movement of the sun, the time was early evening. We quietly left the room, and talked about our future plans.

“I will buy what we need before the day ends. Reese and I will go shopping. Emilia and Reus, take care of those two.” (Sirius)

“Understood. I will make a light meal for Aery-san. Reus, please stay here and watch over them.” (Emilia)

“Understood, Nee-chan. I’ll be the watchdog!” (Reus)

According to the information from Daughtress, it was said that the noble was gathering adventurers to catch the silver wolfkin. Because of that, we’ll finish the shopping with only me and Reese, without being them entangled by them midway.

It was a matter of time to get to the place, but if I leave the front to Emilia and Reus, and the back to Hokuto, there was no problem in us defending them.

And Reus, you’re not wrong because you are a wolfkin, but I want you to stop it because you’re too loud.

“Lastly, prepare for battle. There is a possibility that we will be attacked in the town.” (Sirius)

““““Yes!”””” (Emilia/Reus/Reese)

Not just Reus, Emilia and Reese were also, for some reason, not listening. Is that proof of them growing up?

After I finished giving instructions to everyone, we moved into action at once.

“Well, shall we go, Reese? The skewered meat that you were eating earlier seemed delicious. Can you show it to me?” (Sirius)

“It was delicious. Sure, I want to eat a little bit more, anyway.” (Reese)

“Please take care. Reese, you can have fun.” (Emilia)

“Eh? Having fun... aah!?” (Reese)

Reese finally realized that it was only she and I who were going to do the

shopping. Since she was blushing and looking at me, I extended my hand to be her escort.

“Come on, let’s go, Reese.” (Sirius)

“Y-yes! Ehehe...” (Reese)

Although Reese was embarrassed as she took my hand, she floated a glittering smile.

—

Late at night

While aiming at certain inn, the bad-natured adventurers were walking in the back alleys to avoid attracting attention.

Their number was ten. Everyone seemed to be beasts sharply aiming for their prey. They were clearly different from ordinary adventurers.

“The target is the silver wolfkin. How many are there, all of them?”  
(Adventurer 1)

“A female takes priority. It is for that whimsical noble-sama.” (Adventurer 2)

“Other than that, there is a muscular and splendid wolf. If we can get that, he will also buy it.” (Adventurer 3)

“Heh! He really likes them, huh?” (Adventurer 4)

By considering their aim, they should probably just mobilize without their pointless talk, but the men were walking while continuing their conversation.

Anyways, once they get the money from completing the request, they would immediately escape to another continent. In short, they were aware of the taboo in regards to the silver wolf tribe, and yet, they still accepted the request.

“Although she has a guardian, it seems that he’s just a brat. There will be no problems if we make a surprise attack with ten people at once.” (Adventurer 5)

“I guess so. By the way, there is a cute silver wolf girl and a blue-haired girl inside. How about we take them with us?” (Adventurer 6)

“What? Rather than money, you want to take the girls?” (Adventurer 7)

“Me too, I would rather take the girls than money, but I’m not interested in the brat.” (Adventurer 8)

And then, when the targeted inn was within their sights, the men looked at each other to confirm their plans, but they noticed an abnormality there.

“...Wait a sec. Does our number seem to be getting lower?” (Adventurer 1)

“Where did they go? They were here until a while ago...” (Adventurer 2)

“Aah, they were dragged into the shelters earlier. And... behind.” (??)



“Wha?” (Adventurer 4)

When the men turned back, it was at that moment that the foot of a muscular and splendid wolf swung down. A man was knocked out before he could scream, and the other was blown away by its tail.

“Wh-what’s this!?” (Adventurer 2)

“Make some distance! What are you doing, you’re going too far!” (Adventurer 1)

“It’s not his fault. It was because of him... he is my partner.” (Sirius)

Hokuto was leaning on my side and rubbed his head. There were six... No, except the one that was just blown away, there were five, huh?

“You, could it be that you...” (Adventurer 4)

“Yeah. The adventurers who have gathered here are our enemies.” (Sirius)

After I finished shopping together with Reese, and before we returned to the inn, the information about the people who would attack us and the place that they were gathered at was told to me by Daughtress. It was to settle the debt, but since the leader, for some reason, felt bothered because we were going to escort the silver wolfin, they expressly handed the information over.

Perhaps, there was significance in departing soon, but unfortunately, Aerysan was still tired. Since this was also training for the disciples, I decided to ambush them. However, this was about their reputation, so I only attacked a bit. When it comes to surprise attacks, they should try to sneak in secretly.

By the way, I sneakily pulled two of them that came here brought them into the shelters, knocked them unconscious and left them.

While stroking Hokuto’s head, I took off the the hood that covered my face and smiled at those men.

“You guys are nothing but fools, I heard everything, you know? You are careless when the opponent is a child, you don’t know the strength of your enemy, you’ve been talking loudly and the surprise attack... is too poor.” (Sirius)

“Keh! Originally, we were not good with surprise attacks. Taking down a brat and a monster from the front is...” (Adventurer 1)

“I am not alone, you know?” (Sirius)

Emilia and Reus appeared from the entrance, and we sandwiched the adventurers between us. However, I couldn't feel them being impatient. They grasped their weapons and calmly looked at our direction.

The five men from earlier were easily knocked down, but these five men reorganized their party. That was proof that they had proper experience. I left them, so that they could serve as training for my disciples.

“Oi, the target has come out. They saved us time and trouble.” (Adventurer 2)

“You guys hold that wolf and brat at the back. Capture that silver wolfkin, secure the target and make her a hostage.” (Adventurer 1)

Although they were no good with surprise attacks, their momentary consideration wasn't bad. Two of the men turned to me and Hokuto, while three of them went to Emilia and Reus.

Two men threw ropes and nets in order to catch Emilia, but she manipulated the wind and jumped high. She went to their rear by stepping on their heads.

“This girl is quick... nahh!?” (Adventurer 3)

“It's just that you are slow.” (Emilia)

One of the men turned his head, and was knocked down, unsightly, by Emilia's leg. At the same time, the other man sliced his weapon down, but Emilia purposely plunged into his bosom to avoid the attack.

Before his eyes was Emilia's flowing silver hair, and a palm was directed at his face. Then, Emilia's spell was released.

“[Air Impact!]” (Emilia)

The impact of the wind, with its strength adjusted, punched the man's jaw out. The man was blown away, while making a curved line, and he fell onto a garden plant nearby and fainted.

“One more!” (Emilia)

She fired an [Air Impact] at the man who was knocked down by her foot sweep, and he also completely lost consciousness. Above all, it seems she was

properly training herself because I told her not to be careless, unless the enemy was completely neutralized,

Meanwhile, a man went towards Reus...

“You have a splendid sword, but is it just for decoration!?” (Adventurer 1)

“...” (Reus)

Reus, for some reason, didn't pull out his sword. He just continued to avoid his opponent's sword. The opponent was wielding his weapon while questioning Reus' behavior, but he continued to avoid it.

Just when the man thought it was obviously weird, Reus grabbed his sword while muttering to himself.

“It is difficult... to attack in this situation...” (Reus)

“Have you finally got motivated!? But, such a big sword is...” (Adventurer 1)

Before the man finished talking, Reus' sword was hurled and sliced the man's arm. During the gap where he was being surprised, he was hit on the crown of his head with the flat part of the sword, and the man sank while groaning.

“Haaa... It's no good. I can still see Nee-chan. And I can't fight in a situation where Reese-ane and Aniki are nearby.” (Reus)

“Do your best, Reus. Well, let's tie them up.” (Emilia)

What Reus was doing, just now, was my way of taking care of others while fighting. Certainly, I am defending others while fighting the enemies before me, and preferentially defending companions who are likely to be targeted. However, it was possible because of my ability, [Multi Task], but it is not easy, even if you enhance your physical strength with [Boost].

Nevertheless, Reus was going to do that. Since they seemed to not be putting a great effort into protecting the most important thing, the enemies were aiming at me.

The siblings threw a rope and quickly tied the three helpless men.

By the time the battle of the siblings finished, Hokuto's side was also over.

The man who approached Hokuto was a man with a Halberd that was taller

than his height. Apparently he was befitting of using it as he swung the heavy-looking Halberd down at Hokuto, but Hokuto waved his right forefoot without evading it.

“Eh...?” (Adventurer 4)

The moment Hokuto’s forefront was waved, the Halberd was divided into four.

It wasn’t used habitually because it was dangerous, and the halberd was torn by Hokuto’s nails. In short, he was using something that he usually curls.

Hokuto raised his arm at the man, who was stunned by the loss of his weapon. He swung the nails that were as strong as steel down... no, he stopped them at the man’s nose.

“Garurur!” (Hokuto)

“Hii!?” (Adventurer 4)

Although a cute paw was spread before his eyes, the man fainted and crumbled on the spot, due to Hokuto’s intimidation.

As soon as Hokuto made a small bark, Emilia and Reus rushed over and tied the mn up. I was able to see a very clear hierarchical order.

The top... is me, of course.

“Hmmm... Emilia and Rues are doing their best.” (Sirius)

“You bastard! Why are you looking away!?” (Adventurer 5)

“Eh?” (Sirius)

I was looking at the battle of the siblings and Hokuto, while fighting the man in front of me.

Even if you say that I am looking away, your sword is too monotonous and I can catch it with a sidelong glance.

“Why!? Why is my sword being held back by such a small sword!?” (Adventurer 5)

“You rely too much on your strength. Look, it’s not enough.” (Sirius)

A greatsword that was swung by both hands of an adult, was held by the short sword that I received from Dee. To say it accurately, rather than holding it back, I was shedding it away.

The trick is, it is a matter of leading the trajectory of the sword away when the hit connects but before the opponent's strength get through. If it was Lior or Reus, they would interact with perception and technique, but since the man before me was emphasizing the strength and weight of the sword, it was easy to shed his attack away. If I wanted to add something more, even a small sword made from Gravitite<sup>[5]</sup> is way stronger than your sword.

If looking from the other side, he will feel as if I'm completely evading his sword attack.

"Shall I explain in detail? To swing that greatsword with that level of speed is praiseworthy, but the technique is poor. It is evident that you haven't fought a stronger opponent before." (Sirius)

"Damn it! Are you a brat trying to pretend to be an educator!?" (Adventurer 5)

Because he didn't want to be told by me, without learning the lesson, he raised the greatsword with all his strength. Perhaps, he thought that strength alone was not enough, so it was likely that his opponent would be crushed if he used more strength. He was full of gaps when he raised his sword, but I purposely waited for his attack.

"With this, your sword... ooo!?" (Adventurer 5)

When the greatsword was swung down, I took a step to his rear at the same time. I swept his leg the moment his center of gravity was the most forward, and I scooped up the floated leg by thrusting the sword. Coupled with the center of gravity, the man was thrown into the air as if he was flying forward. He fell on the ground and lied on his back.

"You forget this." (Adventurer 5)

The man recovered the greatsword he had unintentionally released from his hands, and thrust it right next to my face. An Elysion student would faint with just this, but this man was an adventurer, and he was only stunned for a

moment.

Quite a nerve, but... there was no meaning.

I put my hand on the man's belly, and said my words of farewell.

"If you want to hate someone, hate your client. Well, I'm not sure whether you'll be alive or not." (Sirius)

It can't be helped, since this guy was bringing war with the silver wolf tribe to this town.

Maybe the client was being dealt with by Daughtress at this time.

For the sake of having a quiet sleep today, I reaped the man's consciousness with a point blank [Impact].

—

### **Extra/Bonus 1**

"Do you get it, Quad-kun? Sirius-sama is a wonderful person who rescued us. He is very strong, very good at cooking..." (Emilia)

"Ooo! Amazing Nii-chan!" (Quad)

"Aah... that bad habit of Emilia's, once again. Sorry, Aery-san. I'll stop her immediately." (Sirius)

"I don't mind. It's fine. My child is having fun, and Emilia also seems happy." (Aery)

"...So, Quad-kun... Pledging to Sirius-sama is..." (Emilia)

"Yeah, ME TOO... AS SIRIUS-SAMA..." (Quad)<sup>[6]</sup>

"Awawa!? I knew it!" (Reese)

"They are really fun kids." (Aery)

After that, it seemed he was cured when Reese poured water on him.

### **Extra/Bonus 2**

"Aniki! The technique that you used to handle that man's sword was amazing! It barely uses any strength, how can I do it?" (Reus)

“If you keep being struck by Lior-jiisan’s sword, you will naturally be able to do it.” (Sirius)

“Oo... ouu! Alright, when I meet him next time, I also will...” (Reus)

“Furthermore, when he fires his eight slashes attack at the same time, you’ll do it perfectly if you handle all of it. However, if you miss even one, your bones will surely break.” (Sirius)

“...” (Reus)

Actually, I broke a few bones.

At that time, I was fighting by using a wooden sword, but since the strength and technique of both of us was high, I always had the feeling of possibly dying.

The expression that Reus showed at that time was very impressive. It was a mixture of surprise, fear and reverence.

---

#### Notes

1. It’s Daughtress, the raw says ドートリアム&レスリート
2. Simplifying Daughtress Leader as D Leader
3. The names in raw, Aery = エアリー, Quad = クアド
4. The name in raw is ガーヴ.
5. Gravitite is a metal that has been used to make their carriage. The metal can be lightened if mana is supplied into it. That is why their carriage can be heavy or light depending on mana supplied.
6. The caps are all in katakana

# Chapter 70 – Towards the Settlement of Silver Wolf Tribe

---

The next morning after the assault that was aiming for the silver wolfskin, our carriage was on a main road.

Originally, we planned to leave the carriage in the town and walk through the forest, but when we told Aery-san that we had a carriage, she told us that it would be faster to go along on the main road.

I'm not sure how long we were going to stay in the silver wolf tribe's settlement, and having them stay in the town for a long time was... Anyway, until we reach a certain point, we will keep moving and stay with the carriage.

That's why we left the town after half a day... Aery-san, who still hadn't recovered yet, was on top of the carriage, but she had sighed several times already today. The reason was Hokuto pulling the carriage, of course.

"Haaa... it is an unlikely affair for Hundred Wolves-sama to pull the carriage. If anyone heard this, they would collapse." (Aery)

"Is it that bad?" (Sirius)

"Yeah. I think you know this, but since Hundred Wolves-sama is considered as a messenger of God for us, if everybody knew what kind of treatment he got, what would they think about Sirius-kun...?" (Aery)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"Y-yes! I know that you are pulling it because you want to!" (Aery)

What's with that timid voice? Although everything seemed to be completely settled whenever Hokuto barks, but I guess it will not be that easy. If the 'boss' is speaking, the 'subordinates' will not necessarily stop talking.

"In certain circumstances, it seems like we will be fighting against the silver wolf tribe." (Sirius)

"Uhhh... I'm also going to persuade them firmly, so let's simply go for it!"



(Aery)

I thought it would be better to assume that we would be assaulted. While sitting on the coachman's seat, I checked the equipment. And then, Reus, who was running next to the carriage, came closer.

"You don't have to worry. Don't you have me with you, Aniki?" (Reus)

Apparently, Reus was listening to our story. He made a declaration with a confident smile, while giving me a thumbs up.

"I will protect Aniki!" (Reus)

"Protect!" (Quad)

His words and pose were looking good, and Quad, who was riding on Reus' shoulders, also put on a similar pose. It was a very heartwarming scene.

Quad also looked as if he was having fun. Shall I let them be since their relationship was good?

"That's right. It's not only Reus, I am with you, too." (Emilia)

"Me too. I will protect you with walls of water." (Reese)

Today, Emilia and Reese were also riding on top of the carriage. They were sitting beside me and showing me their smiles. What reliable disciples... Hmm?

"Uhhh... Sirius-sama?" (Emilia)

"Is something wrong, Emilia? You look a bit pale, you know?" (Sirius)

While feeling out of place, I touched Emilia's cheeks and I could feel that her skin was a little rough. Furthermore, the usual Emilia would've spoke up before Reus. Although she was pleased when I touched her, the swing of her tail was somewhat light.

Which reminds me, I felt that she didn't want to get too close to me today. Could it be that she was hiding this?

"T-that's not it." (Emilia)

"Do not tell a lie. Hmm, it seems you are not fully rested. Did you sleep properly yesterday?" (Sirius)

I issued a [Scan] on her, just to be sure, but I thought she was simply exhausted, since I couldn't find any sort of sickness.

It was probably because of the continuous unsettled affairs, like meeting people from the same tribe, and confirming that her family was still alive. As I continued looking at her, she looked away. It's just as I thought.

"Actually, I'm a bit sleepy..." (Emilia)

"If that's the case, lie down inside. Even if you can't sleep, it will be different if you close your eyes and calm down." (Sirius)

"I am happy about your feelings, but that's all there is to it." (Emilia)

"It's fine, just lie down. Come, I'll be your pillow. It's alright." (Sirius)

I forcefully pushed her inside the carriage, when Reese looked at the cushion I handed to her, which was made of Hokuto's collected fur, she was looking at me with a surprised look.

"You understand her well, Sirius-san. Even though I noticed her this morning..." (Reese)

"Well, that's because I've been watching her since long ago." (Sirius)

After picking her up, I've been by her side, looking after her. She had been worried about her health, and thought I would overlook it if it's this much.

Reese seemed to have known about it, but she probably forbidden from saying anything. There was no need to hide anything, you know? I looked away as soon as Emilia fell asleep, and I secretly snuck out.

"What do you think when you look at her, Reese?" (Sirius)

"Just what Sirius-san said before, I think she's lacking a bit of sleep. When she woke up, I told her I wanted to apply treatment magic immediately, but unlike Sirius-san's regenerative conduct, mine is not very effective, unless it is against injuries." (Reese)

"For the time being, she should be fine if she takes a light nap. Good grief, if it's just regenerative conduct, I would do it as usual... but have you heard about the cause?" (Sirius)

“The person herself doesn’t seem to understand why, either. But please do not blame Emilia. She doesn’t want Sirius-san to worry. And please think about that child’s feelings.” (Reese)

“...Alright. Now, I feel bad about it.” (Sirius)

When I thought about it, Emilia and Reese were young women, so talking about anything may have been a little insensitive. I think that Reese understood that part, and I guess I should leave it to her, for now.

I turned around, since I felt like I was being secretly watched, and Aery-san was looking at us with a smile.

“Sirius-kun is really loved by everyone.” (Aery)

“I was just living on instinct, though.” (Sirius)

“Although it was by instinct, it was evident that they are thinking of you as their friend. I was having doubts when Emilia told me she became an attendant for a human, but I can understand why, when I look at you, Sirius-kun. No matter what you say to the people of the settlement, I will be your ally.” (Aery)

“The one who makes a fool of Aniki, I will blow them all away!” (Reus)

“I’ll do it!” (Quad)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

It would become complicated if Hokuto went out and rampaged, so could you be a bit more mature? Yeah, really.

While smiling bitterly at Reus, who seemed serious about going against his own tribesmen, and Quad, who was excited without understand the reason, the carriage that we rode continued down the main road.

—

With Aery-san’s guidance, we left the main road, after going through halfway, and prepared to set camp in a place, after passing through an animal trail that hasn’t been used for a while now.

There was still some time before the sun set, but since the carriage couldn’t enter from here onwards, I decided that we stayed with the carriage overnight,

since it had enough provisions.

As a part of the carriage became a collapsible kitchen counter, I used the ingredients that Emilia and Reus had obtained on the kitchen counter, and I was attempting to make new dishes, using the spices we bought in town.

“We will be on foot from here onwards, and if you walk normally, it will take a whole day. However, since there are shortcuts that only we know about, we can get there in half a day.” (Aery)

“We’ll get there in half a day with the shortcuts? I’m thrilled about the hidden paths.” (Reese)

“But even without them, the settlement is at a distance that you can reach within two days. Although it is quite close by, why is it that the people in the town do not know the location of the settlement?” (Emilia)

As Reus moved a bit away from the place, Emilia and Reese were talking with Aery-san, while taking turns watching the bonfire. By the way, Quad was resting on Aery-san’s knee.

While I participated in the conversation, I was stirring the dishes with a ladle.

“It is probably because of the forest. The forest of the Adlode continent is deep and complicated, and it will make a person’s sense of direction go crazy.” (Sirius)

“Yeah. Like what Sirius-kun said, this vast forest makes it impossible to locate the settlement. Thanks to the forest, we can even live in peace.” (Aery-san)

To reach the settlement in two days is something possible, if we know the direction and proceed accordingly. However, it could take double or even triple that amount. It was common knowledge for moving in a forest.

Although it was not as much as an elf, I heard that the silver wolf tribe lives with the forest. Since they know the way to shorten the journey to half a day in this vast forest, they must have considerable knowledge about the forest.

“The forest is commonplace for the silver wolf tribe, so you can’t survive unless you can walk around without hesitation. Nevertheless, to be kidnapped in such a familiar forest... it’s a truly miserable story.” (Aery)

“T-that... was just bad luck!” (Reese)

“That’s right. Aery-san is not at fault!” (Emilia)

She was probably remembering the things about being kidnapped, since Aery-san was noticeably depressed. While Emilia and Reese were comforting her, Reus, who had finished practicing, came to me, while wiping away his sweat.

“Although it is something noisy, did something happen, Aniki?” (Reus)

“Even though her luck was bad, it appears that the person who was kidnapped is depressed.” (Sirius)

“Well, since her child was being targeted, I think it couldn’t be helped. By the way Aniki, what happened to those fools yesterday?” (Reus)

The fools he was talking about were the adventurers who attacked us in the middle of the night.

As soon as we won our battle, and they were all unconscious, the Daughtress’ leader appeared from the darkness. At that time, the siblings had returned to the inn, so they didn’t know what happened to the adventurers afterwards.

After that, the leader ordered his subordinates to tie the adventurers together. He said that he would bring them back to the hideout and make them regret accepting such a silly request.

I wondered what happened to the aforementioned noble, but since I could smell the blood and noticed the air around that leader, it seemed that the noble was appropriately punished. The smell of blood was quite strong, so the possibility of death would be high.

“Even though they know the danger when hunting someone from the silver wolf tribe, they still assaulted us. They are possibly being punished accordingly.” (Sirius)

Even though they were an underworld organization, they corresponded accordingly because they stuck to the rules, but those guys tried to trigger an assault on the town, where the organization was based.

The underworld organizations were heartless to those who do not abide by the rules. The adventurers that were taken away would be, at best, sold into

slavery, or at worst, they would probably be executed. Either way, we would never meet them again.

“Just forget the ones who tried to attack us. More importantly, today’s dinner.” (Sirius)

“Alright. This is my first time smelling such a smell. So, what are you making today?” (Reus)

“It is called beef stew. Actually, it should be cooked for a longer time, but since today is a trial product, I think it should be alright.” (Sirius)

Even if I said it was beef stew, the taste was close to a soup. There was no demiglace sauce, and since there was no easy way to prepare the flavors in the previous life, I tried hard to reproduce the taste with the spices from this world, and... I almost got it close to the real taste.

Since there seemed to be no problem when I simply tasted it, let’s complete the dish this time with this. The taste hadn’t thickened enough, but I’ll do something about that next time.

“It’s finished. Let’s prepare the dishes.” (Sirius)

“”””Yes.”””” (Emilia/Reese/Reus)

Once I informed them that the food was ready, the disciples started preparing for dinner. With coordination that had no redundancy that could be found in preparing the plate and bread for a great many people, the preparation was completed in no time. Should I be delighted or sad that they were better coordinating at this rather than in battle?

“Instead of a Shishou, Sirius-kun is more like... a parent.” (Aery)

“...Dinner!” (Quad)

Aery-san had a wry smile as she looked at the way we moved, and Quad jumped to his feet in response to the smell of the beef stew.

“I can’t hold myself back with this! As expected of Aniki!” (Reus)

“It’s another new taste. Various tastes ooze out. It’s delicious.” (Emilia)

“It’s delicious to eat with bread. Sirius-san, I want more, please.” (Reese)

It seemed popular among my disciples, since they were familiar with the taste of my dishes, but when I turned my eyes towards Aery-san to see what she thought, she was eating the beef stew with a difficult face.

“Does it not suit your taste?” (Sirius)

“That’s not it. I was a bit surprised because I never thought I could eat such a delicious meal.” (Aery)

“Delicious!” (Quad)

Quad also seemed to love it, he already asked for second helpings. I thought that preferences would differ because the seasoning was different on this continent, but there seemed to be no problems. However, Aery-san’s expression looked stiff.

“With abundant knowledge... taking good care of other people... skillful at cooking. Although you are a boy that’s younger than me, you are... a better mother than I am! What is this sense of defeat?” (Aery)

There was some strange criticism, but it looked like they were satisfied with the dinner.

—

The next day, we left the carriage and moved into the forest.

By the way, in addition to the anti-theft measures on the carriage, we scattered trees and leaves after covering it with a camouflage-colored cover and assumed its protective coloration, it had completely assimilated with the forest, and the carriage produced a special magical wavelength that only I know about. If we get lost in the forest, we can come back here with the carriage as the landmark.

“Aery-san, how’s your condition?” (Sirius)

“You don’t have to worry, since I have rested enough. Thanks to Sirius-kun. From here on, we will go through a very dangerous path, so be careful and follow me.” (Aery)

It seemed that her exhausted body had recovered sufficiently during these two days, and now she was guiding us by walking ahead with steady footsteps.

Incidentally, Reus carried Quad on his shoulders, but he let him walking on his foot in order to learn how to walk in the forest. The figure of Quad, who was trying hard to walk behind Aery-san, was refreshing when looking at them from behind.

But... the refreshed feeling was until that.

“We need to climb a cliff. Climb up, but don’t grasp the fragile parts.” (Aery)

“Isn’t a bit high? It will be difficult with Reese-ane’s clothing.” (Reus)

“It won’t be a problem if I pull her with [String] from above.” (Sirius)

While thinking about going through the forest, the cliff that we needed to climb suddenly appeared...

“If you get swept away here, you will be dragged downstream. So don’t fall down.” (Aery)

“This is slightly athletic, isn’t it? Is Reese going to be alright?” (Emilia)

“Yes, if it’s this much, I’ll be fine.” (Reese)

As we jumped onto the rocks that were footholds in a river with rapid currents...

“You guys, be careful, especially here! It will be the end if you fall down.” (Aery)

“Aniki! Quad is afraid and he can’t walk.” (Reus)

“It’s alright, Quad. Even if you fall down, I’ll pick you up with [String]. So, just walk ahead.” (Sirius)

We crossed a bridge made of logs in a deep valley, and finally came back to the usual forest.

Actually, there was a way of going around the mountain and head for the village, but it appeared that there was a shortcut by going across the mountain. The child, Quad, was completely exhausted, so Reus carried him on his shoulders. However, our guide was also tired.

This path seemed to be a harsh path that only silver wolfkin adults can pass through. That explained how Aery-san still got tired, even though she was used



to it.

“...And yet, you guys are not even out of breath! What are you?” (Aery)

“Even if I tell you, if it’s this much, I have done it with Aniki’s training.” (Reus)

“Yeah. If it is with Sirius-sama, we would include this with weights. I think that is more difficult.” (Emilia)

“Aery-san, it’s time for lunch. Shall we take a break?” (Reese)

“Kuhh... Far from showing the dignity of a senior, I am being taken care of, instead. It is regrettable, but shall we do that?” (Aery)

Since she showed her true character considerably, compared to the time when we first met, it was evident that she trusted us. However, was it my imagination that she had an air that was similar to Noel?

Oh, well. As far as I am concerned, Aery-san agreed with Reese and she led us to the place where we can rest. So, we decided to take a lunch break.

It was a small space where log chairs were prepared and trees were cut down. Since there were traces of a bonfire left in the center, it seemed that this place was occasionally used.

“This place was made by us, the silver wolves. Since the path we went through earlier was rugged, this is used as a resting place before leaving and returning.” (Aery)

“It is a good place to watch the surroundings. Well then, shall we immediately prepare lunch?” (Sirius)

After collecting some firewood, I asked Reus to ignite them, and started to cook with the water produced by Reese.

Melting the ingredients of a handmade dried soup, it was a simple thing to do by putting the smoked meat, which was made with the surplus of meat from yesterday, and dried noodles together, but everyone was satisfied. And then, we had a break after the meal, while eating the cookies that Emilia had brought with some brewed tea.

“Although there was not enough utensils, it was delicious, as usual.” (Reese)

“I learned the method of brewing from Sirius-sama, and it is easy if I used the skill handed down by Erina-san.” (Emilia)

While all of us were leisurely having tea, I invoked [Search] because Hokuto’s ears were moving, and I caught multiple reactions approaching our direction.

Reus and Emilia were late at noticing those reactions. They stood up while moving their noses and ears swiftly, and picked up their weapons. But, that was...

“Aniki! Something is coming!” (Reus)

“Sirius-sama, please be careful!” (Emilia)

“‘Pause’. Sit down and wait.” (Sirius)

“Yeah, both of you. Apparently, they have come from over there.” (Aery)

The siblings noticed me and Aery-san still sitting, so they removed their hands from their weapons and sat next to me. Reese and Quad were unresponsive because his mother and I didn’t move. By no means, it wasn’t because they were too engrossed with the cookies.

“...They smell like Aery-san. That means the ones who are coming closer are silver wolfkin.” (Emilia)

“Perhaps, they must have come to search here because Aery-san disappeared. Since the number is small, is it a group that’s scouting the town?” (Sirius)

“I’m glad I didn’t make any mistakes. It looks like I was right in coming along this path.” (Aery)

Aery-san and Quad didn’t return to the settlement, and it had already been two days. Since they couldn’t find them, even when they were searching around, it was probably good enough if they reached the conclusion that they were kidnapped by a human.

However, they probably didn’t know if Aery-san really was kidnapped, so they were probably heading to the town to search for her. Because of that, she predicted that they would go this way, since it was a little bit faster to the town. Her reasoning was very beautifully on the mark.

“I also smell my husband, and he probably noticed me, too. Jiria!”<sup>[1]</sup> (Aery)

“Otou-san!” (Quad)

When the two of them raised their voices, one of the responses suddenly increased in speed and, at the same time, a part of the forest became noisy, before he popped out like an arrow.

“Aery! Quad!” (Jiria)

A silver-haired man with a big body, but not as much as Lior’s, jumped out of the forest. He came close and hugged Aery and Quad.

Maybe this person was Aery-san’s husband, Quad’s father. Although it was a touching scene where he was happily embracing his wife and child at the same time, he was a man with dauntless and splendid muscles, and it was a secret that he was crying a bit while pulling them in. I understood how important they were to him.

“Uooo! I was so worried, you guys! I’m glad that you are safe!” (Jiria)

“H-hey! I wanted to see you too, but please calm down.” (Aery)

“Otou-san... it hurts.” (Quad)

“What are you saying!? Do you know how much your father worried about you?!” (Jiria)

Reus and Reese were happy to see the family hug each other, but only Emilia had a slightly different reaction. She was certainly happy, but I could feel the sorrow behind her smile.

I understood that she was thinking about her past, but at least for now, I stroked and covered her head to calm her down, and she sneakily bit my shoulder and waited behind me.

The man called Jiria calmed down after reuniting with his family, and then the other silver wolfkins, who seemed to be his friends, appeared. The number was three and everyone looked to be warriors with strong physical bodies, but they were displaying an intense presence and were staring at us. They were looking directly at the humans; me and Reese.

“Fall back, Aery. I will punish these fools first.” (Jiria)

“H-hey, stop it, Jiria! These children are...” (Aery)

“You can’t, Otou-san!” (Quad)

“You also take a good look, Quad. Otou-san will put holes in those who made you scared. You guys, let’s do it!” (Jiria)

The male silver wolfkin didn’t listen to his wife and child, who were asking them to stop, and he attacked us with his companions at the rear. Is he someone who doesn’t listen when he’s angry and fired up? I had expected this... after all, isn’t it like that?

“When I thought about what kind of person kidnapped Aery, aren’t they still children?” (???)

“But, I will not forgive them even if they are children!” (Jiria)

“Not only Jiria’s family, they have enslaved our brethren!” (???)

“You guys aim for the girl at the rear! I’ll get this guy!” (Jiria)

While Aery-san’s husband came at me, the other three were aiming for Reese. I think having three guys on a single girl at the same time is embarrassing. Then, Emilia and Reus appeared and were standing to protect Reese.

“Fall back, Reese!” (Emilia)

“You need to defeat me before you can get Reese-ane!” (Reus)

“Are they still being controlled? Damn, this is going to hurt, but please endure it.” (???)

“We will free you guys immediately!” (???)

It seemed that the chokers attached to the siblings were seen as collars, and they were believed to being forced into protecting Reese.

The silver wolfkins tried to remove the siblings by throwing some punches. However, Emilia avoided the opponent’s punch and locked his movements by gripping his arm, while Reus took it from the front.

But, there was still one who remained.

“Do not get close to Reese-ane!” (Reus)

Reus took the arm of the opponent whom he received the fist from, and threw him into the man that was approaching Reese. If his opponent was an ordinary opponent, he probably could defeat them, but the opponent was a silver wolfskin with high physical abilities. The opponent that Reus threw was barely avoided, but even if that broke his balance, he was getting closer to Reese.

“Ah!? I’m sorry, Reese-ane!” (Reus)

“This human girl! Release our brethren...” (??)

“It’s alright, Reus. There!” (Reese)

Reese also avoided the thrown punch in a similar manner to Emilia. She grabbed his joint and swept his feet, and used the opponent’s momentum to throw him onto the ground. It appeared she was making the best use of the Aikido that I taught her. It would be good if they could do this much in an actual battle.

And then, Aery-san’s husband, who came close to me, shook his fist with an angry expression.

“This is also for my family!” (Jiria)

“I sympathize with you, in regards to your family.” (Sirius)

I avoided that fist by slightly tilting my body, and I jumped into his bosom while shaking his hair and cheeks with wind pressure. And then, I stepped firmly onto the ground until it started to crack. Furthermore, I pulled my left arm backwards, and drove my right palm into the pit of his stomach at the same time.

I arranged a self-taught Tongbeiquan based on Kenpo from my previous life. It was a hitting technique that simultaneously gave an impact from a step and my own strength. The man stumbled upon receiving the blow, but he landed firmly on his feet and stared at me. (ED: Tongbeiquan is a school of martial arts that’s popular in Northern China)

“To endure that... aren’t those considerably sturdy abs?” (Sirius)

“That much is my advantage. And now... haven’t my companions turned the

tables on you?" (Jiria)

Emilia clinched victory with her opponent in a joint lock and was completely unable to move, Reus' was thrown away and stunned, and Reese's opponent had been thrown onto the ground, and was bound by her water magic, unable to move.

By all odds, the progress of the battle was disadvantageous for Aery-san's husband, but he didn't seem to give up, and declared, while clenching his fist.

"I will not give up, you know?! To defeat you guys, for my family and my friends, I will absolutely make you release..." (Jiria)

"Stop it!" (Aery)

"Guhaa!?" (Jiria)

The readiness for indomitable resolve was plainly shattered by a single blow of the wife, who attacked from the side, and the man collapsed. Although he didn't crumbled from the single blow of mine, as expected, he fell down from a single hit from the flank.

"Wha-...what are you doing, Aery? For you, I am..." (Jiria)

"You didn't listen to the story and just did what you wanted! Hey, you guys too, come here!" (Aery)

Because of Aery-san's voice, the men who were suppressed by my disciples became quiet, and they were released.

Since the fight was interrupted, the silver wolfkins unwillingly gathered when they were called by Aery-san. She coldly spoke with her index finger pointing to the ground.

"Sit down." (Aery)

"W-wait a sec, Aery. We were worried about you, and we just wanted to save our tribe..." (???)

"S-I-T-D-O-W-N!" (Aery)

"....." ...Yes." (Jiria & other silver wolfkins)

The men couldn't say anything because of Aery-san's intensity. It seemed

there was nothing else to do, but sit quietly. By the way, even in a different world, the way of sitting in such a situation was seiza.

The sight of four adults sitting alongside one another and being preached by woman that was smaller than them was embarrassing to the point they wanted to divert their eyes away. Quad, who stood by his mother with folded arms, imitated her cause to further the reproduction.

“These children, you know, they are the benefactors who saved us! I understand that you misunderstood the situation, but please think a little bit more!” (Aery)

The hierarchical relationship between Emilia and Reus was good, and the women in this world were really strong.

While explaining the situation like this, Aery-san’s preaching lasted an hour.

After Aery-san’s preaching and explanations were over, the misunderstanding about us had been solved, and the men...

“””””Hundred Wolves-sama!””””” (Jiria & other silver wolfkins)

They made a seiza again.

Since it would become complicated, I instructed Hokuto to hide, and he waited to come out until the right time.

The men were sitting side-by-side in front of Hokuto, but the mainly important one, Hokuto, what was he going to do about them? He turned to me as if he wanted to say something.

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

“Do whatever you want.” (Sirius)

Then, Hokuto barked once, and he said something to the men.

According to Reus’ translation, he seemed to be saying that he is a wolf serving his master, and not the existence that the men called him.

“Ma-master!? You mean that human man? For you to be like that...” (Jiria)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“I do not mind that you worship me, but in regards to my master, I would like

you to respond normally. If you put your hands on him for a trivial reason, I will make you regret living...’, that’s what he said.” (Reus)

“He is exactly like Sirius-sama, isn’t he?” (Emilia)

I have heard that owners and pets are similar, but even in a different world, that seems to be the same.

The contents were conveyed by Hokuto’s groaning voice, and the men were frightened with their tails and ears drooping. Normally, I’d get close and brush him, but when I looked at this, it makes me think that he really was a messenger of God.

The other men were scared, but only Aery-san’s husband, Jiria-san, was looking straight ahead and replied to Hokuto.

“I certainly heard the words of Hundred Wolves-sama. We will never put our hands on your master!” (Jiria)

He turned his face towards me while saying that. Unlike some time ago, the hostility towards me completely disappeared and he had a gentle look.

“And the most important thing is, he is the person who saved my family and the people of our tribe. I invite you to our village, and I would like to welcome you.” (Jiria)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

The things that need to be conveyed by Hokuto seemed to be over, he was quite satisfied and came back to me.

Since the talk had progressed further, we drank the tea that Emilia brewed while waiting, and approached the silver wolfkins, who finally stood up.

“Ah... I wonder if you have been informed about the situation.” (Sirius)

“Aah. We a had huge misunderstanding. Please, let me apologize first.” (Jiria)

When Aery-san’s husband lowered his head deeply and apologized, his companions, who had been kept behind him, bowed their heads together. Although the feeling of being scared at Hokuto hadn’t disappeared, they had favorable smiles towards us.



“Thank you for helping my wife and son. Without you, I was about to lose the most important people in my life.” (Jiria)

“I also said thanks to your wife. Thanks to her, these two are able to see their family.” (Sirius)

“Of course, like you said, you are their master. Also, I’m fine with Jiria.” (Jiria)

“Understood. My name is Sirius. Nice to meet you, Jiria.” (Sirius)

I shook hands with Jiria, and then introduced my disciples. Jiria and his companions were pleased with the hand greetings, especially with Emilia and Reus, who were from the same tribe and the grandchildren of an acquaintance.

“When I heard that Aery was kidnapped, I was impatient, but by no means did I think I would meet Garve’s grandchildren.” (Jiria)

“There will be a feast. Let’s return at once.” (Aery)

“They are stronger than us, Garve-san also will be happy.” (Jiria)

They seemed to be the people who were trained by the siblings’ grandfather, Garve. The siblings surrounded me with high spirits. They were laughing and seemed happy again.

—

Then, we headed for the silver wolf tribe’s settlement together with Jiria and others.

We heard various stories on our way to the settlement, and Jiria’s group was a reconnaissance group going to the town. And once they confirmed Aery-san and his son were in town, they planned to attack the town if the negotiations didn’t get through.

Since it was a nobleman who wanted to run off with silver wolfkin, I think the negotiations wouldn’t have succeeded. If we didn’t help, the town would have undoubtedly been attacked.

“Say, how do you plan to verify whether Aery-san was in the town or not? Unlike Aniki, you don’t know the that town well, right?

“Hahaha, you know, Reus... Aren’t we silver wolfkin? If it is Aery-san’s smell, I

can find her anywhere in the town!” (Jiria)

“Even I know where Aniki is in the town. And if it is Neechan, she would know even from one mountain away!” (Reus)

“Wha!? Even I can do that!” (Jiria)

“”Stop it!”” (Aery/Emilia)

To the men who were starting a strange mouth fight, Emilia and Aery-san, who were their guardians, used their fists to make them silent.

We exchanged information with each other while moving in the forest, and we finally arrived at the silver wolf tribe’s settlement.

Looking down from a hill, the silver wolf tribe’s settlement was entirely surrounded by wooden fences. There were countless houses made of wood and stone, which seemed to be bricks.

“We will return and explain everything to them, so Sirius and the rest, please wait here. Aery, please take care of them.” (Jiria)

“Leave it to me. More importantly, please hurry so as not to let our benefactor wait.” (Aery)

While waiting for Jiria, I remembered something about silver wolf tribe while I was looking at the settlement.

According to the information that I read in a book, they seemed to make a living by hunting and doing small scale agriculture, and after seeing it, I think the information was correct. The male silver wolfkin plowed the fields, while the females processed the meat, which I think were obtained from the hunts. The siblings stood up and were in a daze as they looked at the scene of nothing but people with silver hair and tails, no matter where they looked.

“...They are silver wolfkin, just like us, Neechan.” (Reus)

“Y-yeah. Although it is not the village we lived in, it feels like we have come back home.” (Emilia)

“I think you may have various mixed feelings, but let me say this. Welcome to our settlement. We welcome you guys.” (Aery)

Aery-san had a full smile on her face as she embraced the siblings from their shoulders.

Jiria came back after a while, and informed us that we got permission to enter the settlement. We headed to the entrance of the settlement, but Jiria was looking at the siblings with a sorry look.

“Actually, I tried to inform Garve-san that his grandchildren were alive, but he still hasn’t returned. I wanted you to see him soon, but I’m sorry.” (Jiria)

“It is not something Jiria-san needs to apologize for. And, where is Ojii-sama?” (Emilia)

“I think that he has probably gone outside. Although he is already quite old, Garve-san is an amazing person who hasn’t weakened, even now, you know?” (Jiria)

Even if he was old, since I know a guy who is uselessly energetic and strong, I don’t think that’s strange.

“If you have such an amazing Jii-chan, you don’t have to worry. Besides, we have also prepared ourselves, so it is going to be alright to return home.” (Sirius)

“...That is true. Anyhow, there is a feast today. This is for the safety of Aery and Quad, along with the pleasure of knowing that our brethren are alive, and thanks to Sirius and Reese for making that possible. Please, enjoy to your heart’s content!” (Jiria)

—

And the feast started that evening. All of the silver wolkin who lived in the settlement gathered at the central square and were making some noise. A big bonfire was burned, and it looked like a campfire.

There were various meals made by the settlers in front of me, but I couldn’t put my hands on it, even though the party had began.

The reason was...

“Thank you so much for saving our brethren.” (??)

“Even though you are a human, you are one of us.” (??)

“Tell me if you are in trouble.” (??)

The reason was because all of the silver wolfkin were coming before, me one by one, and gave words of gratitude. I seemed to have underestimated the tribe that was said to have strong bonds.

I didn't feel bad about being thanked, but it seemed the number of people in the settlement was roughly two hundred. Not even half were finished yet, and I could only sigh.

Moreover, some people continued to pray to Hokuto, who was sitting by my side, so the density of people around me was unusually high. 'If I am bothered'... I was told to say it, but I was a bit bothered with the current situation. I was getting unreasonably hungry.

“Are you going to drink, Reese-chan? ...Uhm, maybe it's too early for you. Well, do you want to eat this meat?” (Aery)

“Oneechan, this is my favorite dish. Let's eat together.” (Quad)

“I will have it all. Yeah... the taste is unique, but it is delicious. Do you still have that?” (Reese)

“Come, I'll give you mine. Even so, you have a very good appetite, girl. It was worth making these dishes.” (??)

Reese was enjoying the meal with Quad. They were having a friendly chat with the group who attacked us earlier and the people who cooked the meal.

It seemed that her special skill was to get along well with others immediately.

And the siblings, Emilia and Reus, were having fun chatting, while being surrounded by their tribesmen slightly away from me.

They looked happy because the siblings were safe, some of them were hugging them, while shedding tears, and they were drinking the sake that was made in the village, one after another.

Both Emilia and Reus were laughing happily. I was really grateful that they came here.

The feast continued on well after the surroundings became dark, the big shots performed a dance in front of the bonfire, and they showed off the dance that's been handed down in the silver wolf tribe.

Finally, I got to eat at that time, and when I was talking about the food that I ate for the first time... a part of the crowd suddenly became noisy.

When I turned my line-of-sight, I saw Emilia and Reus... and an old man who had a similar stature and face to Reus standing before them.

Could he be...?

“Ojii...-chan?” (Emilia)

“Jii-chan?” (Reus)

“Is that so, you guys are my grandchildren...right?” (Garve)

From the situation, there seemed to be no mistake that Garve-san was their grandfather, but the impression of the reunion looked strange.

Garve-san's expression was like a Noh mask, nothing could be felt. He wasn't pleased or angry. Actually, if his grandchildren were alive and suddenly appeared, wouldn't he feel confused?

“I'm glad that you are safe.” (Garve)

When you think whether he had muttered a word, he quickly looked away from the siblings, and came in front of me, after he talked to a nearby guy.

“...Are you the master of my grandchildren?” (Garve)

Garve-san was expressionless as usual, but those eyes that stood in front of me and looking down were similar to a soldier's who had served in the military for a long time. With experience piled up with age, the intensity was tremendous.

However, I did not care about such insight. In fact, I was beginning to get angry at this old man.

Isn't it that a bad attitude to have when you see your grandchildren for the first time? The siblings were at a loss of what to talk about, and, in the first place, it was impossible to finish a discussion with a word.

The staring contest between me and the old man continued for a while, and when the silver wolfkin near me ran away... I replied, after I swallowed the meat that I had eaten.

“Yes, but what is it?” (Sirius)

“Is that so? Well then, have a match with me.” (Garve)

As soon as I got to the settlement... I was invited to fight.

—

### **Extra/Bonus 1**

After eating the beef stew.

“With abundant knowledge... taking good care of other people... skillful at cooking. Although you are a boy that’s younger than me, you are... a better mother than I am! What is this sense of defeat?” (Aery)

“Now now, I can’t win against the taste of a mother, so I feel like I am losing, instead...” (Sirius)

“Okaa-san’s meal is more delicious!” (Quad)

“Hauuu!?” (Aery)

“And, Emilia-Oneechan’s and Reese-Oneechan’s chests are so soft...” (Quad)

“Gahuu!?” (Aery)

“Aah... which one I should follow?” (Quad)

“You have to give up on this one, huh?” (Emilia)

### **Extra/Bonus 2 (Author: This part appears since Hokuto is popular)**

## Presenting Hokuto

(Author: It is like in the morning news program, so please read it like a dog's introduction corner)

Hokuto-kun serves his master, Sirius-kun. He is a very rare wolf called Hundred Wolves.

The name that carries a high level of strength and nobility, but he is quite sweet towards his master.

This time, it seems like his master is heading towards the settlement of the silver wolf tribe, so Hokuto-kun follows him.

For him, his place is next to his master. Even if it is hell, he has the determination to follow him.

And then, they proceed through the forest with the guidance of the silver wolfkin mother... oops, a high cliff appears in front of Hokuto-kun.

Hokuto-kun's master and his juniors are climbing the cliff, but Hokuto-kun is a wolf and he can't climb.

However, since Hokuto-kun is proud with his strength, he will be alright.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

He quickly climbs all the way up in a blink of an eye by kicking the wall. For Hokuto, it is a piece of cake. There is no problem.

Next, he came to a river with a raging stream.

However, since Hokuto-kun is proud of his strength, he will be alright.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

He jumps over the river. There is no problem. He solves everything with a single blow.

Furthermore, he comes to a log bridge on a steep cliff.

However, since Hokuto-kun is proud of his... just cut it short.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

He crosses over both the valley and log bridge with a single jump. Even if he

falls, there will be no problem with Hokuto-kun's physical ability. Except for his master, he alone can go through heaven and earth.

After he had a lunch break, his master was attacked by the silver wolfkin.

Hokuto-kun wants to drive away the enemies of his master. He wants to quickly penetrate and claw them away with his nails. However, since the situation will become complicated and the growth of the juniors will be disrupted if he goes out, he purposely steps back and watches over them.

The battle ends very quickly, and when Hokuto-kun appears with confidence... he is revered, once again.

Hokuto-kun wishes that his master is revered instead of himself, but since he knows his master dislikes it, he feels annoyed every time it happens.

Today, also, Hokuto-kun is troubled for being revered.

---

#### Notes

1. The name in raw is ジリア



# Chapter 71 – The Bond between the Stubborn Father and Son

---

“Is that so? Well then, have a match with me.” (Garve)

I was observing him while being told that by the sibling’s Ojii-san, Garve-san.

Silvery-short hair like Reus, countless scars on his fearless face, and there was a portion of his left ear hollowed and missing. He looked like he was already over 60 years old, but that overflowing aspiration was as good as Lior-jiisan.

His attire was similar to an easy-to-move-in sleeveless clothing, and there was a shining, well-maintained silver Tekkou<sup>[1]</sup> on his left hand.

Aery-san’s husband, Jiria-san, was a man who used his muscles as his weapons. Based on the muscles on the body and the footwork, there was no difference between this person and those who fight with their bare hands.

Even though I haven’t fought yet, I judged that this person was definitely strong.

“Why?” (Sirius)

“Are you going to say that you won’t fight if there is no reason?” (Garve)

He was looking at me with a sharp gaze. It seemed like his intention to fight me was openly visible. So, why are you looking at me, and not the grandchildren behind you? I can’t accept that.

When I got up to inquire his reason, Jiria-san, who noticed the unpleasant air, stood in front of Garve-san.

“Wa-wait a minute, Garve-san! Why do you suddenly want to have a fight?” (Jiria)

“Don’t you understand? This man is not an ordinary person. He is certainly a man who can be my obstacle.” (Garve)

“It’s not that I don’t understand your feelings, but he is our benefactor.

Wouldn't it better to discuss this together?" (Jiria)

...He wasn't stopping the fight.

When he displayed unpleasantness at Jiria-san's words, this time, the siblings came in to defend me.

"Please stop it, Ojii-chan!" (Emilia)

"Yeah! Why are you challenging Aniki, Jii-chan!?" (Reus)

Although he merely said nothing but a word, the siblings admitted that Garve-san was their relative, and tried to stop our fight.

However...

"Do not... call me that!" (Garve)

""Eh!?""" (Emilia/Reus)

The words that came back were cold.

The siblings were shocked by those words, but they didn't try to move from their places and continued to protect me. They might be mixed feelings, but I was really happy about their feelings.

But, you know... your Ojii-san seemed to be someone that needed a slightly different kind of talk.

"It looks like this guy won't be satisfied if I don't fight him. Emilia, Reus... step back." (Sirius)

"But, Sirius-sama. Such a battle is meaningless." (Emilia)

"There is no reason for Aniki and Jii-chan to fight!" (Reus)

"Well, it is a fight, but this is his way of 'talking'. It won't involve our lives, so it's alright." (Sirius)

Even if I say it is a talk, it is a 'talk' with our fists. So I removed the sword on my waist, and placed it next to Hokuto.

I went passed them, while stroking their heads, and then, I was guided to the center of the square. There was a bonfire nearby, but it was at a sufficient range for us when we faced each other, since this was a bare-handed fight.

From the surroundings, we heard voices supporting Garve-san. He was a person who suddenly requested a match, but he seemed to be adored by the tribe.

The surrounding silver wolfs appeared to have thought of this as a side entertainment for the feast, but everyone held their breath because of the serious air and were watching attentively.

There was only the gradual crackling sound of the fire, but while hearing that...

“Aniki! Good luck!” (Reus)

“Please do your best, Sirius-san!” (Reese)

“Sirius-sama! Go for it!” (Emilia)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“Onii-chan, do your best.” (Quad)

I heard the cheers from the disciples and Quad, and the tense air dissipated. Since the other party was too motivated, I was saved because I could have a conversation before the match began.

I have decided to fight, but first, I wanted to know his reasons. When I tried to say so, the other side unexpectedly spoke first.

“...They are longing for you, aren't they?” (Garve)

“Aren't you the same? More importantly, is it necessary for you to fight me?” (Sirius)

“It is for the sake of getting stronger.” (Garve)

“Your other reason... no, I'll ask about it later. Anyways, I have something I want to hear before we fight. Why... did you say such words to your grandchildren, Emilia and Reus?” (Sirius)

He was rejecting the siblings. In other words, it is like he was saying they were not his family, and that was not the silver wolf-like behavior that valued family members. I also considered that he was not their real family, but he said such relieving words at the beginning, so I didn't feel like it was something to say to someone that was unrelated.

Garve-san's expressionless face slightly crumbled because of my inquiry. His mouth twitched, before he showed a bitter smile.

"They are not bad. This is... my problem, you know?" (Garve)

"Well then, shall we place a bet? If I win, Garve-san will allow your grandchildren to call you Ojii-san. And, you will tell me your reasons." (Sirius)

"...That's fine. But, I also have conditions if I win. I heard about you from Jiria and Aery to a certain extent. Are you going to go to where my son's settlement was at?" (Garve)

"Yes, I am. To condole their parents, as their friend." (Sirius)

"That is an admirable intention. Then, if I win... I also want to go on that trip. Also, Emilia will..." (Garve)

Garve-san directed his line-of-sight towards the three young men who were standing behind him. Everyone was a refreshing young man who had strong bodies and their expressions weren't bad. Could it be...?

"Emilia will stay in this settlement. And, I want you to tell her to exchange vows to someone over there." (Garve)

""Ehh!?""" (Garve's disciples)

I didn't say anything because I was somewhat expecting it, but the surprised voices of his disciples went across. Of course, there were voices raised by the siblings.

"I will not leave Sirius-sama's side!" (Emilia)

"Yeah, Nee-chan belong's to Aniki! If you lay your hands on her, even if you are my friends or Jii-chan, I will not forgive you!" (Reus)

"Sit Down!" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Reus)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Emilia looked like an abandoned puppy. Since Reus was standing in front of his sister and was sending bloodlust to the young men, I forced him to sit down.

By the way, Hokuto was also sitting reflexively, and the young men who were

shaken dropped their faces. For me, Emilia was a beautiful woman, and those men seemed to be quite serious.

“Sirius-san, about Emilia’s feelings...” (Reese)

“I understand, Reese. Garve-san, since your grandchildren said such things...” (Sirius)

“Just call me Garve. You are not looking at that child with dangerous eyes, I guess? If that’s the case, I want to tie her down with a man from the same tribe. So, don’t you think that the most important thing is to live peacefully?” (Garve)

“That is also one possible way, when considering her happiness. However, since I usually leave the decision to the person herself, I don’t want to give the order as her Master.” (Sirius)

My disciples come with me as they wish, so I want to respond to them properly. Those are my feelings. And, if Emilia likes me and doesn’t want to leave me, I will respect her feelings and respond to her.

“Those two have grown up, and they can decide the way they want to live by themselves. Because of that, I can’t accept your condition.” (Sirius)

“If that’s the case, you will have to live in this settlement. Even though you are from the human tribe, I think that, in this case, someone like you would be welcomed, and Emilia would also like it.” (Garve)

Hmm, so that’s what you came up with? It’s true that the disciples won’t complain if that’s the circumstance, but I’d have to give up my dream. The disciples would say that that would be alright, so long as they stayed by my side, but I’m sorry, I think I will chase my dream.

“...I want two kids.” (Emilia)

And then, Emilia was grinning, probably because she was thinking about the future with me. I wonder if it was about having kids, or if she was smiling because she can stay by my side, or something else.

“I’m sorry, but I have my own way of doing things. Besides, I have no plan to lose, even with such conditions.” (Sirius)

“There is no other way then. But, I don’t intend to lose, either. I must become

stronger!” (Garve)

Let’s also hear the reason why he wanted to get stronger after I win. Garve-san and I took our positions and prepared for the match.

“That Tekkou is opposite, but similar to what Tou-chan had.” (Reus)

Reus’ murmur reached my ears, and the thing that wasn’t said earlier was suddenly noticed. I think... there was no need to forget it, but let’s ask him, at least.

“One last question. Why didn’t you say anything about Reus?” (Sirius)

“That child is already a full-fledged warrior. And if he has already sworn loyalty to you, it’s not necessary for me to stop him.” (Garve)

Isn’t it because he is a man? I felt the same air as ‘it doesn’t matter since he is a son, but I’ll be sweet to a daughter forever’. Anyway, it seemed like he really cared about them.

Since it wasn’t necessary to prolong the conversation, I began to concentrate and turned on the ‘switch’.

—

Generally, silver wolfkin try not to use weapons too much.

They have strong bodies, even without relying on weapons, so they don’t want to use weapons that sacrifice their speed.

In the case of Reus, the impetus was because of my action, and from the point where I murmured that ‘Strongest Sword’ expectation, the way of using the sword became more natural compared to the bare-handed style. By the silver wolf tribe’s perspective, he joined the category of oddballs, but since he was not avoided, I guess it was fine.

Well, while thinking about unnecessary matters, Garve kicked the ground and threw his right fist. So, I activated [Boost] to square him off.

Although it wasn’t a speed that was incomparable to Jiria, the speed was not as fast as Lior’s sword, and it could be, somewhat, overlooked. From a single blow of his fist, which was loaded with so much strength, I understood that he didn’t think of me as a human or a child.

The moment I tried to intercept the swinging right fist, Garve greatly stepped on his foot and stopped the right fist. And then, the left fist equipped with the Tekkou was shot out. Even though I judged it as a protective hand armor, the Tekkou was used as a weapon. Feinting from the beginning was evidence that he was used to battles, but I am someone who had kept struggling against that sword maniac.

I didn't try to forcibly drain the opponent's strength. I avoided it by letting the fist fly next to me. Without a moment's delay, I grasped his arm as if I was holding it, sent a kick that lifted my up body while aiming at his face, but it was avoided when he bent his body and neck.

He threw a right uppercut at me, who was full of gaps while I was in midair, but I seized it from the side of the fist, and moved my body by hugging his arm to avoid the assault. I dropped my foot on top of the opponent's head, but the opponent made a big jump, and my foot only hit the ground.

As we separated from each other, we made eye contact again, but the old man was happily smiling and shook his fists.

"As I expected, you are strong! Rather than evading the blow earlier, you even counterattacked... very good. I am likely to climb to the top again." (Garve)

"I am not a stepping stone. Moreover, instead of being stronger, I want you to first apologize because of your attitude towards Emilia and Reus!" (Sirius)

Whatever the reason was, when you said something about letting your grandchildren live peacefully, it showed that you cared about the siblings. If you were not good with words, you could embrace them or express yourself with action.

And if you refused, I would say that you were cold-hearted. I don't want to be in trouble in the future. Because the ones that were mostly bothered were Emilia and Reus.

"Aren't you going to use a weapon? You have a knife on your chest, and you can use magic, if you want." (Garve)

"It's not necessary. I already understand everything from what I've seen, and I am confidence with my Taijutsu." (Sirius)

“Then, I will use it.” (Garve)

This is one of the ways Shishou mentioned.

You can ignore any objection if you fight and win in the opponent’s field of expertise... although it is a style that emphasizes on nothing but strength, I agree with that and abide it.

Because of that, I use Taijutsu against an opponent who uses Taijutsu, and there was no use arguing about being called Ojii-chan.

Avoiding the attack of the opponent again, I pulled out with a counter. If I had to say it with words, instead of Lior’s sword, this time it’s with fists.

Even if I’m late to say this, there was a slight difference. The trajectory of the attacks moved, freely like a whip, and he used both his arms and feet unsparingly. I had a lot of trouble because of that.

I won against Lior because of good compatibility, but I am competing against Garve whose battle style was similar to my own. Taking advantage of the strong physical ability of the silver wolf tribe, he can easily do moves that are difficult for normal people. I guess I’m at a slight disadvantage?

“...This is my first time seeing Sirius-san struggling in a fight.” (Reese)

“Our Ojii-chan is such an amazing person, isn’t he?” (Emilia)

“...Aniki!” (Reus)

Neither one of us got hit by a single blow, but during that time, the exchange kept going without any time to breathe.

It was still alright, but unlike the silver wolf tribe, who had excellent physical strength, I am a human being. So the difference will soon come out.

While bending to avoid a large swing, I made a foot sweep, but it was easily avoided. However, my aim was to keep the distance in order to arrange the disturbed breathing.

“Why!? No matter how confident you are, this shouldn’t be your original style. Do not hesitate to use weapons!” (Garve)

“Huh... I refuse.” (Sirius)



“Are you not going to be serious until the end? Then... let’s end this.” (Garve)

When Garve loaded up his strength, he started to release a thick amount of mana from his whole body. It started to gather on his left arm, until the air appeared to be distorted.

It was proof of loading mana to the extent that the mana, which was originally colorless and transparent, can be virtually seen. If I get hit with that... it won’t be a laughing matter.

“What are you doing, Garve-san?! If you do that, he will die!” (Jiria)

“Uhhh, Jiria-san. What is Jii-chan trying to do?” (Reus)

“That is Garve’s [Wolf Fang]. It is a killer technique that crushes rock and even steel.” (Jiria)

Using mana to its own limit, collecting it on the dominant arm and hit it... it was a simple one-hit killing technique. An enormous amount of mana would pour out, creating an illusion of a huge fist.

It is a technique that’s similar to ‘Ultimate Heaven’ of the ‘Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style’, I have a feeling my bones will break if I receive it upfront.

When I was worried about how to cope with it, while listening to Jiria-san’s explanation to the disciples, Garve-san gave a shout to collect the attention of the surroundings.

“Everyone! Since it is dangerous, fall back!” (Garve)

The ring that surrounded us expanded at a considerably large rate, except the disciples. That made me understand that this blow was more than what I expected.

I should probably evade it, but I am confident. I guess there was no other way but to put on a grand show.

“Avoid it, if you can. But... do you think it can be avoided?” (Garve)

“Is that so? In that case, I’ll receive it from the front.” (Sirius)

“What?” (Garve)

If I can endure this blow, Garve will surely admit defeat. The disciples raised their voices at another place from where Garve was surprised by my reply.

“Sirius-sama! Please, stop it!” (Emilia)

“She’s right, Aniki! Even though there is [Boost], it is still difficult to make up for the difference in physique!” (Reus)

“I wonder if my magic can heal you?” (Reese)

I am sorry for making you worry, but, right now, I can’t afford to reply. So, I will ignore you guys. If it’s done poorly, I probably will die. I made a stance with my legs in an L-shape that was deeper than usual... and profoundly concentrated.

“Are you coming? That single blow... I will accept it.” (Sirius)

“You seem confident. Well then, go get it!” (Garve)

Deeply dropping his waist, the speed of the protruding Garve was several times higher than before, while crushing the ground. I see. It is difficult to avoid when seeing the sudden acceleration for the first time. But... I had gone through storms of bullets and blades in the previous life. How am I going to cope with this amount of speed?

Dampen the excess power to the limit, and concentrate all of my nerves sharply like a sword...

“Haaaa!” (Garve)

Without explaining the name of the technique, I invoked [Boost] with full power to hold the directionality, and, at the same time, I used my power to catch the swinging left hand with my right palm.

At that moment... the ground beneath my feet crumbled. A huge shock ran through my rear and scourged the ground.

As a result, there was a big hole behind me, but I remained upright and kept Garve’s fist.

“Wh-what?” (Garve)

While the people were surprised, including Garve, I crept into his chest in a

flash, and hit Garve's jaw with my left palm. That blow was enough to lift Garve's body. He lost consciousness and fell onto the ground with his back.

"The pain... was light, huh?" (Sirius)

I confirmed the surroundings while shaking my numbed right arm. It was really good that it didn't involve the disciples and other silver wolfkin. As I confirmed the hole that opened up, as if a bomb had burst behind me, it made me realize the might of Garve's killer technique.

When I checked Garve's condition, my disciples finally started running while screaming my name. Several other silver wolfkin came closer, so I left the treatment for Garve to them and met my disciples.

"Sirius-sama! I'm glad that you're safe. And... what about Ojii-chan?" (Emilia)

"He fainted because his brain was shaken. He will wake up after a while, without any problems, so there is no need to use magic." (Sirius)

"That's good. Ah, but Sirius-san, please show me your arm. I will check for injuries." (Reese)

When I told them that there was no problem with Garve, the siblings watched their relative, while sighing in relief. Since he was admired by other companions, I thought it might be bad if I defeated him... but the other silver wolfkin praised me while applauding.

I heard later that the silver wolf tribe honors those who are strong, so long as there was no problem with their personality. A Shishou was challenged by their disciples one after another... so such a thing is not a big issue.

As I responded the applause by waving my hands, Reus was wholeheartedly staring at me with shining eyes.

"You're amazing, Aniki! How did you do that? Aniki is unscathed and a hole opened on the ground!" (Reus)

"There is no name for that, but it is one of the skills that is at the height of the parrying techniques. In other words, what I did was let the force of the opponent's attack through my feet." (Sirius)

It is one of the skills my Shishou used in the previous life.

Accepting the attack from the front, and diverting it away onto the ground while minimizing the burden on the body. For example, it is similar to electrical earthing. I had about 20% of the force on myself, but I can handle it by the strengthening effects of [Boost].

By the way, Shishou was extremely skilled in this technique. She caught a moving big motorcycle while yawning.

Shishou briefly explained that the human body has limitations, so it is practically impossible to do it. In fact, I could never do it in the previous life. It was a technique that I had forgotten during my later years.

But, when I was reincarnated into this world, on a day when I was able to perfectly control [Boost], I suddenly remembered this technique and tried it.

I failed many times against Lior-Jiisan as an opponent and broke my bones, but the result was what you saw. Nowadays, I did it with a wooden sword, and this time, it was easy to do because it was with my bare hands. However, my right arm was numb because it was a blow that went beyond my expectations. The force that failed to be relayed was slightly hurting my body. If it was this much, it would heal immediately, and there was no problem, since Reese was giving the treatment.

Since Shishou used this technique calmly, I thought that she was originally from another world. Well, for me, whoever Shishou was, I don't care about it that much.

More importantly, it was troubling to tell Reus, who was pestering me, wanting me to explain.

It was difficult, even if I told you with words. It was a technique that you can use only when you can fully control the flow and movement of your whole body. There was nothing else you can do except to remember it with your body.

For the time being, I told him that he couldn't do it until his [Boost] reached my level.

"Is that so...? I got it, Aniki. But I will definitely do it someday!" (Reus)

Reus had the intuition, which can be explained with words, and he had a strong will, despite losing many times before. If it was this child, he may be able

to do it, someday.

After calming the motivated Reus, who was breathing roughly, my mental strain had lessened as I received treatment from Reese.

—

The feast ended as soon as the conclusion between me and Garve was decided. Then, the silver wolfkin went back to their respective houses.

We saw Jiria-san, his wife and son off going home together, and then we gathered at Garve's house. The reason was so that Garve could have a talk with the siblings as soon as he woke up.

While watching Garve lying on his bed, a voice came from the entrance and a man came into the house. That man seemed to be Garve's junior, and he introduced himself as the Chief of this settlement now.

"Good grief... he's being unreasonable. So troublesome." (SW Chief)<sup>[2]</sup>

He was slightly younger than Garve, he would soon be called Ojii-san.

Since he had some other business to attend to, he was only able to join the second half of the feast. He apologized for not greetings us earlier. He gratefully took my hand because I helped Aery and her son, and also the siblings.

Sighing at a sight of the unconscious Garve, he looked at the siblings, and narrowed his eyes while looking at them nostalgically.

"You guys are Emilia and Reus, correct? Hmmm... you really do look like Felios and Rona."<sup>[3]</sup> (SW Chief)

"Do you know our father and mother?" (Emilia)

"Yes. Felios and I are childhood friends. I knew about those two through letters." (SW Chief)

The sibling's father was the chief of another settlement. They seemed to have kept in touch by reporting the their situations, since they were both heads of settlements and childhood friends.

Even this person, who was the head of another settlement, knew about the siblings, so why did Emilia's and Reus' father never talk about Garve? And why

did Garve reject his grandchildren?

Since the siblings had similar questions, Emilia opened her mouth to represent us.

“Excuse me... why didn’t this person allow us to call him ‘Ojii-chan’? The others also...” (Emilia)

“Yeah, I came here to talk to you about that. There is a possibility that your Jii-san won’t explain it, and I think the most important thing is that the both of you should know about it.” (SW Chief)

It seemed to be a complicated family talk, so I signaled Reese with my eyes, but when I tried to leave... I had to stop because the sibling had grabbed my clothes.

I had to sit again because, from their eyes, they were begging me to stay. Reese also took a seat because they pulled her clothes as well. The chief seemed happy when he saw this scene.

“Hahaha, both of you are liked by these two. You guys look like a real family.” (SW Chief)

“Yes! They are important to us.” (Emilia)

“Hehe, they are my Aniki and Reese-ane.” (Reus)

“Well, if you don’t mind. First of all... should we talk about when your father, Felios, was born?” (SW Chief)

Emilia was still grabbing my clothes while we listened to the old stories of Garve and the siblings’ parents, Felios and Rona.

Garve was a charismatic person who led his fellows and he took good care of his subordinates. Most importantly, he, who had strength that was unique among the people in his settlement, was the chief of the settlement.

Then, he married a woman who lived in the village, and a son was born between the two. He was the father of the siblings, Felios.

But, Garve’s wife died after Felios was born. Garve became very depressed, but he recovered for the sake of his son. He raised his son while receiving help from the surroundings.

In order to raise Felios to become a strong man, the training for him started together with other children of the same age.

“Garve was strict with him, as well as the others. Generally, he was a gentle person, and he was only scary during training. Even Felios and I cried a couple of times...” (SW Chief)

Tempered by Garve, Felios grew big and became a warrior who could rival his parent. From the surroundings, it was said that he was certainly going to succeed the position of chief.

But then... an incident happened here.

“We found a suspicious group when Felios and I went to the forest to hunt. It was a slave merchant who seemed to have gotten lost because of some monsters’ assault. But the things they had were... silver wolfkin.” (SW Chief)

There were two women led by them. The two immediately attacked them in order to rescue them, but they were held back by the silver wolfkin who had been enslaved.

Although they threatened to invoke pain from the slavery collar, one of the women already reached her limit, and then...

“...It was disastrous. When I looked at the rear after completely annihilating them, Felios was crying while holding the lady who died. And the one who comforted Felios was the other woman.” (SW Chief)

Apparently that woman was the siblings mother, Rona.

The woman who died was her younger sister. It seemed that it wasn’t that long since she got sick. She kept saying thank you while hugging Felios, who held her sister until the end.

He somewhat recovered and when they headed back to the settlement, there was an immediate discussion on who would take care of that woman... Rona. It seemed that a couple decided to take her in, but, apparently, Felios forcibly took custody and said he would bear the responsibility.

“Of course, others objected, but Felios firmly didn’t give up. Garve-san was stubborn from a certain aspect, but Felios was also like that.” (SW Chief)

That was probably like licking each other's wounds.

But the mental trauma was gradually healed because of Rona's honesty and gentleness, and the strength of Felios' heart. The licking of the wound soon became love. A few years later... the two came to love each other.

"Then, he told Garve about getting married, but the sleeping Jii-san over there did not accept it."

Either because his wife died early, or he had to raise him alone, the Garve of that time was unusually stubborn. Felios wanted to marry Rona because he felt indebted for not being able to save her sister. It looked like he was thinking about taking responsibility.

Since Garve didn't allow it, even when the father and son were fighting seriously, they didn't talk to each other and then he married her. After that, they escaped to a distant settlement.

"By the time Felios became the chief of that settlement, I became the chief of this settlement. From the letters that I received, he wrote that he didn't know some things about his old man. But I never thought that he would not talk about it to his children." (SW Chief)

"...Did father hate Ojii-chan? And Ojii-chan also..." (Emilia)

"That's not it, right?" (Sirius)

There was at least that expectation, and I don't think it's all about hating. Before Garve fought with me, I remembered that Reus mentioned something about Garve's Tekkou being similar to what his father had.

"Reus. About Garve's left Tekkou, didn't you say that your father also had one? And, it was on the right hand, right?" (Sirius)

"Eh? Yeah... you're right. I think it was on the right hand, but it was similar to his." (Reus)

"I also remember it. My father maintained it dearly, and there wasn't a day where he forgot to do that." (Emilia)

"Really, as expected, they really are father and son. Isn't he the same as Jii-san?" (Sirius)



When I examined the Tekkou earlier, it was made out of rare mithril. It wasn't something that's easily available. I don't think it was a coincidence that the father and son had separate ones. Originally, these Tekkous were a pair, but they separated them.

And they both cared their own as if they were very important...

"In other words, they split up, but they were not able to be honest to each other... isn't that right?" (Sirius)

"You are right on point, Sirius-kun. Yeah, it wasn't good for them to be so stubborn altogether." (SW Chief)

After listening to that, the siblings sighed with relief, and Reese was smiling as she put her hand on Emilia's shoulder.

"Your Otou-san and Ojii-san, they did not hate each other. Isn't that good?" (Reese)

"Yeah... it was a bit of a false alarm, but I am relieved." (Emilia)

"Which reminds me, Tou-chan sometimes absentmindedly looked at the Tekkou. I guess it was because of that." (Reus)

"Hahaha, aren't you glad, Jii-san? It seemed that Felios also wanted to make peace." (SW Chief)

When the chief was talking to the sleeping Garve, Garve turned his back to us while snorting. I was aware that he was already awake in the middle of our conversation, but since he didn't say anything, I just left him be.

"Ojii-chan! You were awake?" (Emilia)

"Are you alright, Jii-chan?" (Reus)

"If you feel pain, shall I treat you with my magic?" (Reese)

"Even so, don't call me that. And Ojou-chan, thanks for your offer, but I'm fine." (Garve)

He kept his back to us and refused the offer. The chief sighed and called out to him, while shaking Garve's body.

"You know, Jii-san. Your grandchildren are bothered. Please, explain it to

them.” (SW Chief)

“...” (Garve)

““Haaa, well then, let me explain. It is sad looking at you.” (SW Chief)

“...Have it your way.” (Garve)

Since he got permission from Garve, the chief started talking about what happened to the siblings’ parents after that.

—

After Garve’s son left, he was living the usual life. But, the time he spent idly somewhere like an empty shell had increased.

By the time he took over the chief position from the man in front of him, Garve knew that Felios had become a chief of another settlement. As the chief received the letters, Garve persistently asked him about his son’s current circumstances, so he was somewhat annoyed.

“A few years later, he wrote in his letters that Emilia and Reus were born and that they were happy. And finally, the letter that said that he should forgive his father soon arrived, but...” (SW Chief)

It was the unforgettable fateful day for the siblings. The chief slowly opened his mouth, while sadly casting his eyes down.

“Your settlement... was attacked by groups of monsters. We only knew about the assault after a few days. Everything except you guys was annihilated. Our companion went there by chance and he barely returned alive... I’m really sorry.” (SW Chief)

“No... I think there was nothing could be done.” (Emilia)

When I realized it, Emilia was holding my arm instead of my clothes, so I stroked her head to calm her down. The chief was smiling as he looked at the scene, he then turned his eyes to Garve.

“The moment he heard the report that Felios’ settlement was attacked, that Jii-san rushed out without looking back. But since it was dangerous to go there without any preparations, it was difficult to stop Jii-san with our companions.” (SW Chief)

Apparently, it would take a few days from here to get to the settlement where the siblings lived, even if we go all out. Anyhow, while calming Garve down, the chief chose some warriors and prepared provisions. They seemed to have immediately left for Emilia's and Reus' settlement, but...

"Your settlement was full of monsters. Furthermore, there were many strong monsters, they kept appearing no matter how many times the monsters were defeated. They had no choice but to retreat." (SW Chief)

Although there were no survivors, they sent their warriors many times to make tombs for their brethren... but they were repeatedly overwhelmed by the monsters and had to withdraw.

Is this the reason why Garve said that he wanted to become stronger when he had a match with me?

He would become stronger and defeat the monsters. And then, he would regain the settlement and mourn his son.

"Let alone enemies of my son, I can't even build a grave for him. I just don't have the qualifications to be called Jii-san by my grandchildren. Dear me... I really want to meet my grandchildren, despite of this." (Garve)

"Ojii-chan..." (Emilia)

"Jii-chan..." (Reus)

"...That's why, don't call me that." (Garve)

Garve probably hated the monsters that attacked the settlement, but, more than that, he can't forgive himself.

If he didn't oppose the marriage, they would be spending time together in this settlement. His son would be safe, while Emilia and Reus might not have been attacked by the monsters. And more than anything, he regretted the fact that he couldn't make up with his son ever again.

He forbade himself from embracing his grandchildren, whom he wanted to meet... but that doesn't matter to me.

"No. Garve, just allow them calling you Jii-san. Do you remember the promise if I won?" (Sirius)

“Hmm, there is no other way then. It was... a promise.” (Garve)

“Just as you said. Both of you, please do not hesitate to call him Jii-san.”  
(Sirius)

Although Garve still kept his back to us, he didn't refuse the promise. So, I forcibly pushed the sibling's backs in front of Garve.

“Uhhh... Ojii-chan.” (Emilia)

“... What is it?” (Garve)

“I'd like you to tell me... about Otou-san.” (Emilia)

“...If I'm in the mood, sure.” (Garve)

“Well then, Jii-chan. Tell me about that technique. The wolf technique, or something.” (Reus)

“...I'll think about it. By the way, it is called [Wolf Fang].” (Garve)

Reese and I quietly left, leaving behind the family that was finally able to have a conversation for a bit. The two grandchildren will probably mend Garve's heart afterwards. Now, I want them to enjoy talking with their family.

When we left, we took Hokuto along, who immediately came with us, and strolled around the settlement under the moonlight. Because the other residents already went back to their home, the settlement became a calm world where only few living sounds were heard, the sound of the wind and insects playing.

We walked around without purpose. And then, we sat, side-by-side, on a rock found along the way and enjoyed a leisure talk while looking at the moon.

“It's not that I don't understand his feelings, but he was just a stubborn old man. Oh well, at least they are going to be together for a while. If you are in touch with cute grandchildren, that stubbornness also will be washed away.”  
(Sirius)

“Together for a while... are you still going to bring Garve-san?” (Reese)

“That's the plan. Those two will be pleased, and Garve's intention can be fulfilled. I see no problem with increasing our war potential. He said to take him

if he won, so he will definitely join us if I invite him.” (Sirius)

“No one is losing anything. To be together with your family is the best, anyway.” (Reese)

“I guess so. Does Hokuto think the same?” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

They brushed the cuddling Hokuto, wasting time while enjoying the calm mood.

—

We stayed at the settlement and leisurely spent our time there for several days.

I think we were spending fulfilling days by helping with the harvest and hunting, Hokuto was worshipped, Reus agonized because was failing to ward off the people who were praying towards Hokuto.

We thoroughly enjoyed the livelihood of the silver wolf tribe, and then, we tried inviting Garve on our journey when we thought about leaving soon.

“Will you come with us?” (Sirius)

...Although I can be said to be shameless by relying on young people, I still want to follow you. Please... I want you to take me.” (Garve)

There was a considerable difference in age, but while it became difficult in terms of Garve’s family, Garve and I were like peers of the same age.

We were not seen as a grandchild and a grandfather, and we were almost talking casually by now. Since I showed my ability to overcome Garve to the people, there was no one trying to argue with us.

After that, the talk about Garve traveling with us had spread to the whole settlement. There were also others who wanted to follow us, but the chief and Garve told them to be cautious, since their brethren were kidnapped by humans the other day. Thus, they had to give up.

As we completed our preparations, we didn’t feel tired. We kept our spirits firm. Then, we left the settlement while being sent off by the silver wolfkin.

We went through the forest with Garve as our guide in the front. The siblings were smiling, sticking by Garve's side.

"Fufu... thanks for guiding us, Ojii-chan." (Emilia)

"Please, Jii-chan!" (Reus)

"...Uhmm." (Garve)

Although he allowed them to call him Jii-chan, his attitude towards his grandchildren was still a bit stiff. But... it was only on the surface.

He couldn't see those two as his grandchildren until he could liberate the settlement and mourn for his son. But when he was determined to drink, he seemed happy when his grandchildren depended on him like spoiled children, so that determination was easily crumbled.

Jii-san, your mouth has loosened, hide it quickly.

"Ojii-chan, what is that plant?" (Emilia)

"Jii-chan, teach me [Wolf Fang] soon." (Reus)

"...Hei, I will tell you, but talk one at a time!" (Garve)

Whether it was about the liberation of the settlement, or Garve falling for the siblings... either way, it was a view.

While looking at such a pleasant sight, we headed for Emilia's and Reus' hometown.

—

### **Extra/Bonus**

The degree of Tsundere for every Otou-san (Ojii-san) towards their children (grandchildren).

Garve => Emilia and Reus... Tsundere Level C (currently growing)

Cardeas => Reese... Tsundere Level A (initial level D)

Lior => Emilia... Tsundere Level EX

Level E... "Who are you bastard?"

Level D... "I-I don't really care!"

Level C... “I allow you to call me O-ojii-chan (Otou-san)!”

Level B... “I-it’s not that I like the child (grandchildren) so much!”

Level A... “I will buy you anything, and it will not hurt even if something enters my eyes!”

Level EX... “Even if it’s not real, they are my grandchildren!”

—

## Presenting Hokuto

Today, Hokuto-kun is also happily staying by his Master.

There are various things that have happened. Today, he comes to a settlement of the silver wolf tribe.

While there are a lot of same brethren of his juniors, Hokuto-kun participates in a feast while being worshipped by many.

Hokuto-kun will be alright even if he doesn't eat, but the silver wolf tribe offers a lot of food. Although he says that it is not necessary, he is troubled because they still give their offerings regardless.

Since he got more than he deserves, he gives it to his Master. He is relieved because his junior, Reus, and his Master's companion who he likes, Reese-chan, eats a lot.

And then, Hokuto-kun stays in the settlement for several days. However, people never fail to worship him every day.

On one particular day, Hokuto-kun was walking around the settlement while feeling good since his Master brushed him. A silver wolf mother, who had a baby, came in front of Hokuto-kun.

Apparently, the baby was born a while ago, so she seemed to want to inform Hokuto-kun. It is said that the child will grow strong if they inform Hokuto-kun.

Hokuto-kun didn't understand it well at that time. He tilted his head while watching the cute baby, and he suddenly remembered that there was something similar in the previous life.

When he visited a certain country with his Master, his Master said that he would give his blessings, and he remembered a very important person performed a cross on animals and humans.

But since Hokuto-kun is a wolf, he thought it should be different, rather than performing a cross, he decided to put his paw on the belly of the baby. Of course, he didn't put any weight on it. Hokuto-kun, who can easily control his strength as easy as pie, put his paw on the belly with a soft touch, between touching and not touching.



And, the blessing was completed... with a light bark.

When Hokuto-kun raised his face, somewhat feeling satisfied, the mother was deeply moved. She thanked Hokuto-kun while crying. It was a secret that attracted quite a bit of attention.

The next day, a mother, together with her child and baby, came in front of Hokuto-kun.

Apparently, yesterday's case seemed to have spread. It seemed everyone came to receive Hokuto-kun's blessings.

It is unlikely that sighs will leak out, but since Hokuto-kun can't escape being a wolf that serves his Master, he blessed them all. He doesn't do it halfheartedly.

Fighting.<sup>[4]</sup>

He was spiritually tired, but since his Master was watching him doing his best, his Master deliberately brushed him on that day.

He was really happy, but Hokuto-kun thinks that it is hard for him to be worshipped.

---

**Notes**

1. It is something like hand guard. It is mainly used by Ninja, Samurai or Monk – FFXI reference.
2. Silver Wolf Chief.
3. The name in raw is フェリオス and ローナ.
4. He said Ora Ora.

# Intermission 1 – Sirius and Everyone in the Settlement

---

The next day, we stayed at the house of the siblings' grandfather, Garve, and I woke up because of a noise.

"Uhhh... have you woken up?" (Garve)

Since the house was not so spacious, there were only two rooms; the living room and Garve's bedroom. Because of that, Emilia and Reese used the bedroom, while the guys, Reus and I were sleeping together with Garve in the living room.

We could immediately notice who woke up in such a place. Then, I greeted Garve, who had woken up earlier, while yawning.

"Good morning. Basically, this always happens at this time, so please don't mind it." (Sirius)

"Aah. I'm going to head out for a moment, you should stay in bed." (Garve)

"Where are you going?" (Sirius)

"It's my morning training. I never miss doing this every day." (Garve)

"Ooh... can I go along with you?" (Sirius)

"Have it your way." (Garve)

Thus, I decided to join Garve's early morning training. I was wondering whether I should wake Reus up, but he was sleeping like a log because he made a lot of noise yesterday. Emilia was the same, she still hadn't wake up yet.

They were having fun, especially because they had reunited with their family. I decided to take it slow, for once. Therefore, only Garve and I went out.

"Hundred Wolves-sama, please watch over us so that we can stay healthy for today, as well." (??)

"Hundred Wolves-sama. I wish for a good harvest this year." (??)

“Woof...” (Hundred Wolves)

When we came out, we were greeted by Hokuto, who was sleeping next to Garve’s house. There were several silver wolfkin already praying in front of him.

I thought that they were probably going to do farm work. Since they were wholeheartedly praying, Hokuto seemed to be unable to leave his spot. I slightly waved my hand to cheer him up, and then, Garve and I headed out into the forest.

—

Morning training seemed to start with running in the forest. Somehow, it felt like we were similar, and a strange sense of intimacy was swelling up.

Maybe it was because we were running on a path every day. When I kept running in silence, until the path became smaller in the forest, Garve, who ran in front, looked back with a slackened mouth.

“...So you can do it. Having stamina to catch up to me so easily... your victory was not a fluke, huh?” (Garve)

“I guess so.” (Sirius)

While running, I thought that the speed was strangely quick. Apparently, I was being tested.

“Other than my son, the only one who can catch me with me probably you. If I have to say more, you are a human being. The world is truly wide.” (Garve)

“Yeah, the world is wide, and there are different kinds of people. As far as I know, the one with the sword...” (Sirius)

And then, I continued running with Garve, while talking about strong men like Lior. I heard this later, but the people who live in the settlement seemed to certainly collapse after this kind of running pace.

After we finished our run, we headed to the settlement’s square.

There were ten men, who seemed to be Garve’s disciples, lining up side by side. They started rearranging their postures and lines when they noticed that Garve and I were coming. It seemed that they had good discipline.

Aery-san's husband, Jiria, was also among these men. He raised his voice when he noticed my appearance.

"Eh... is that Sirius? By any chance, are you coming for a visit?" (Jiria)

"Well, I wonder about that. Anyway, I am curious about what kind of training is done here." (Sirius)

"Aah, Garve-san and us..." (Jiria)

"Jiria, stop with that nonsense talk and go line up. I'll be strict today!" (Garve)

The training was a sparring session with Garve on a one-on-one basis.

Not just fighting, Garve thoroughly proceeded while pointing out their weaknesses.

The time for each person wasn't long, but since they were constantly made to move, all of the men collapsed, filled with sweat after the sparring session. Even after after sparring everyone, Garve wiped off only a small amount of sweat.

This way, Garve was forging himself by sparring with his disciples every day. At the lowest rank, there were also kids who were less than ten years old. However, Garve enthusiastically taught and treated them like adults.

After all of the members had fought him once, the morning training was concluded. As I returned home with Garve, I discussed some points that I had in mind while he was sparring.

"Say, Garve. When you were sparring with Jiria, I felt that your center of gravity was strangely unaligned. Could it be that your arm...?" (Sirius)

"Is that so? Please tell me the details later." (Garve)

Even if the advice was from someone who defeated him, he was proactively listening in order to become stronger. He understood that even if it was this much, it could make him stronger.

—

There were no people praying before Hokuto when we got back home. However, there was a basket filled with offerings, such vegetables and dried meats, placed in front of Hokuto.

Although he said that he didn't need them, he couldn't turn them down because the people firmly wished for it.

Hokuto didn't need to eat meals. But, since he already got it, I asked him what he wanted to eat. And then, Hokuto held the basket in his mouth and put it on my hands.

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

"...Are you giving me this? But isn't this for you?" (Sirius)

"Hundred Wolves-sama said it's all good. It would be impolite not to accept them." (Garve)

It felt awkward to receive the offerings, but since Hokuto said so, let's accept them. When I told him that I would brush him later, he happily wagged his tail.

As we entered the house, Emilia and Reese, who were already awake up, stood in the kitchen and they were preparing breakfast. Reus, who was stretching in the living room, noticed us and greeted us with a smile.

"Good morning, Aniki, Jii-chan." (Reus)

"Aah...Good morning, Sirius-sama, Ojii-chan" (Emilia)

"Good morning. Breakfast is almost done." (Reese)

"Good morning." (Sirius)

"Morni—... Breakfast... Good morning." (Garve)

Garve was relaxing his expression as he replied to the morning greetings from his grandchildren, but he immediately switched back to his usual expressionless face. But when I saw him from the back, I understood that he was desperately trying to hide his joy because his tail was slightly trembling.

I thought of giving them some help, but they drove me out and asked me to take a seat. Since it couldn't be helped, I handed over the offerings that I got from Hokuto, waited and relaxed in the living room.

"I made a dish that I learned from Aery-san." (Reese)

"It's a unique dish, but I changed the taste a bit to suit ours. Whether it fits Jii-chan's taste..." (Emilia)

“Don’t worry about it. It is good enough just to have it prepared.” (Garve)

The dish was cooked with beans and herbs. It was a roast on whole meat in soup, which was boiled with various meats and vegetables. The amount was huge for a morning breakfast, but in this world, it wasn’t unusual to eat a lot in the morning. It appeared that the silver wolfkin tend to have that strong tendency. I noticed it since the siblings also eat well.

Garve ate the arranged dishes, and then... he hardened.

“How was it? Ojii-chan.” (Emilia)

“It is not up to Aniki’s level, but Nee-chan’s dishes are delicious, right?” (Reus)

“...Ummm. It has a slightly thick taste... but it is delicious.” (Garve)

“The dishes here are lightly seasoned, for most of them, I think. Sirius-san, what do you think?” (Reese)

“Yeah, it has a good taste. Both of you have improved.” (Sirius)

Emilia and Reese were pleased and doing high fives because of our replies.

I heard this from the silver wolf tribe. They said that Garve mostly had meals alone when his son, Felios, left.

Since this Jii-san might be overwhelmed because there were suddenly four more people, including his grandchildren, but he was certainly pleased. As no one noticed that Garve was slightly in tears, we started to eat breakfast.

—

After breakfast was over, Garve headed out to hunt with the young men, and Reus said that he wanted to come along.

Emilia, Reese and I visited the settlement and enjoyed a stroll.

The young men headed out to hunt, while the rest in the settlement was working hard, doing field work, making necessary various goods, and repairing houses.

“It is peaceful, isn’t it?” (Reese)

Reese was right, this settlement seemed peaceful. No one was hungry and diseases didn’t spread too far. There were many monsters in the surrounding

forests, but the silver wolf tribe was so strong in general, so there was no problem.

We walked along the farming area, and I gave some advice based on my previous life's experience. Since I had been to countries with food problem many times, I had some knowledge about farming.

By the time it was late morning, I finished giving advice. When we returned home to prepare lunch, Hokuto came out with a basket filled with crops, once again. It seemed that he was worshipped again and was given crops. I gratefully accepted it.

—

After we finished lunch and the usual training, we were wondering what to do next. It was good to continue our training, but I wish there was something to change that.

“Sirius-sama, let's play Frisbee!” (Emilia)

“Please, Aniki!” (Reus)

When I thought that, Emilia took out the Frisbee that she always used. Do you always carry it around?

That question was raised, but I didn't complain about playing Frisbee. We immediately went to the square. And then I took a throwing posture after the siblings finished warming up.

“First, I'll throw lightly. Here you go, go get it.” (Sirius)

The moment I threw the Frisbee... the air in the village changed.

Children who were interested came...

Housewives who were tanning pelts...

The young men and women who were handling the meat...

They were staring at the Frisbee all at once, as if a black hole attracted their eyes.

The children came running behind the siblings, they were frolicking happily while waving their tails.

“I got it, Nee-chan!” (Reus)

“Kuh!? I will get it next time.” (Emilia)

It was Reus who succeeded in catching it, but he seemed to have noticed the abnormal circumstances.

While gathering attention, Reus returned it to me. I grabbed the Frisbee and stroked his head, and then, the silver wolfkin in the settlement crowded me.

“Hey! What is this?” (??)

“It’s an interesting projectile weapon. Can you make it for me?” (??)

“Please, make it for me, too!” (??)

I thought that there was some entertainment, but... was it up to this point?

For the time being, other people joined in after I finished teaching them how to make it. Since the throwers were only me and Reese, we became unquestionably tired. It would be nice if another adult could throw it, but the thrower seemed to want to chase it after they threw it. Throwing was, somewhat, unpopular.

A sight of nearly ten children chasing a single Frisbee all at once felt surreal.

In this way, Frisbee is said to be a common thing for the silver wolf tribe.

When I got home, after I had enough with the Frisbee, I received a basket that contained three times the amount of offerings from Hokuto. It was already like this. It made me feel that there would be no problems regarding our meals if I have Hokuto during my stay.

Apparently, he was asked by a parent to bless their child. Since he had a large number of visitors, I decided to brush him thoroughly this evening.

I spent several days in the settlement just like that, but I gradually noticed something wrong with Emilia. I vaguely understood the reason, but it wasn’t time to give her a helping hand at the moment. So, I decided to quietly watch her.

And just when I thought about us leaving soon, I was invited by Garve for a nighttime stroll after dinner.



I thought about having a thorough discussion for once. I also wanted to ask for his guidance to the sibling's settlement, and he accepted it. I was, then, led to a small hill that was slightly away from the settlement.

Garve and I were the only ones looking down on the settlement from that location. He poured some sake that he brought in two cups, and presented one of them to me.

"Are you at the drinking age? Can you keep me company for a bit?" (Garve)

"Well, then, just a bit." (Sirius)

Lightly bumping our cups, we quietly looked over the settlement while drinking. Garved poured a second cup and opened his mouth after making a big sigh.

"My grandchildren... they are cute. Thank you so much for saving them."  
(Garve)

"...I accept your gratitude." (Sirius)

Garve finally opened his mouth of what he thought of the siblings. I didn't say anything. It wasn't that I didn't understand his mixed feelings. I didn't rescue the siblings because I wanted his gratitude. I just did it because I wanted to do it.

"If they are cute, you need to properly say it, you know? The two of them care about you, but if you continue being like that for too long, you'll be separated."  
(Sirius)

"I understand, but I don't want my grandchildren to think of me as their family, until I mourn my son. That is... why." (Garve)

Drinking the poured sake in one go, Garve's monologue continued while looking up at the moon, as if he bore the weight of something.

"I couldn't believe the love between Felios and Rona. I regretted it a lot, but that was burdening me the most. I regretted it so much, to the extent that I think it was better to die at hands of the monsters together with my son..."  
(Garve)

"But, Garve. You are still alive. And you were able to meet your grandchildren,

correct?” (Sirius)

“Aah... I understand that. Regardless of how much I regret it, the past will not come back. And, the moment I first saw my grandchildren... my heart trembled as much as when my son was born. In recent years, I went to my son’s settlement while killing some monsters, everything I did was to mourn Felios, but they are the warmth that I haven’t felt in a long time. I also thought that it was good to be alive for my grandchildren.” (Garve)

“But is it because of that? That’s why you had such attitude towards Emilia and Reus, huh?” (Sirius)

“That’s right. Even if I am aware of it, I can’t convince myself. I can’t move on until I mourn my son, I’m such a miserable man. I am not worthy to be called ‘Jii-chan’ by my grandchildren.” (Garve)

At the end of those words, we kept tilting our cups without saying anything.

I drank the first cup because I understood what this guy wanted to say, and then put the cup away. I looked at Garve, who was drinking his fourth cup.

“Will you come with us?” (Sirius)

“...Although I can be said to be shameless by relying on the young, I still want to follow you. Please... I want you to take me.” (Garve)

Garve quietly placed his cup down and deeply bowed. But, he didn’t really have to bow. Even if Garve didn’t say that, I would have invited him, anyway.

“Please, raise your head. You also have enough strength, and you know the location of the settlement, right? Moreover... aren’t Emilia and Reus your family? It’s alright for you to follow us openly. Before you say something shameful, please be nice to your grandchildren.” (Sirius)

“I guess so. I will think about it... Sirius.” (Garve)

“Stubborn old men are unlikable, Garve.” (Sirius)

It seemed like it was going to take some more time before he could be more affectionate towards the siblings.

Although there was an age difference, I enjoyed drinking under the moon together with Garve, who called my name like we were of the same age.

# Chapter 72 – When You Get Over It

---

— Emilia —

I was breathing and running in a world of darkness where everything was dyed black.

Wait...

Wait...

It was difficult to breath and I may collapse at anytime, but I looked forward and continued to run.

After all, Okaa-san and Otou-san were standing over there.

I wanted to see you.

I wanted to hear you.

I wanted to bite your shoulder again.

And yet... no matter how much I ran, I couldn't get close to Okaa-san and Otou-san.

Quickly...

Quickly...

I have to go to Okaa-san and Otou-san... quickly...

“Okaa-san, Otou-san, run awayyyyy!” (Emilia)

A big black monster appeared behind Okaa-san and Otou-san.

And that big mouth opened up and was about to eat my precious family.

“I won't let you! [Air Shot]!” (Emilia)

The magic that I used as easy as breathing nowadays... didn't activate.

“Why!? [Air Shot]! [Air Slash]! [Air Impact]!” (Emilia)

No matter how much I concentrated... no matter how much I shouted, the spells didn't activate.

I understood the reason as soon as I saw my hands.

“Why...?” (Emilia)

My body reverted to a child’s... back when the settlement was attacked.

I could cast spell after I met —sama.

I couldn’t get over it... because I was just a kid... I couldn’t do anything at that time...

“No... Stop...” (Emilia)

Even so, I ran... and ran... desperately extending my hand to my parents.

But, Okaa-san and Otou-san were smiling and walking towards the monster.

“...Emilia.” (Rona)

Stop!

Please run away!

After this... please don’t say it!

“Live strongly. I love you...” (Rona)

At the end of those words, Okaa-san and Otou-san... by the monster...

—

“Again...?” (Emilia)

When I slowly opened my eyes and looked at my hands, I could see my growing hands, not a child’s.

What I saw until a while ago... was a dream.

I kept seeing... that nightmare several times since that day.

I almost didn’t dream about it since I was saved by Sirius-sama, but when I stepped on this continent, after we rescued Aery-san and Quad-kun, I started to see it again.

When I saw the sight of a scared mother and her son, I instinctively remembered that day. It was visible every day after that. I was seeing the nightmare of the monster eating Okaa-san and Otou-san.

Whenever I woke up, it was always in the middle of the night. I couldn't sleep after that because I got worked up. Because of that, I haven't been getting enough rest. Someday, I might do an irreversible mistake.

I became calm when I embraced the cushion that smelled of Sirius-sama, but the effect was gradually getting thinner. I had to cling on to Reese, who slept next to me, since I couldn't calm myself down yesterday. At that time, Reese gently hugged me. She stroked me until I calmed down, but I had already depended on her too many times.

After all...

I looked outside of the carriage, so as not to wake the sleeping Reese, and I confirmed that Sirius-sama was sitting in front of the burning wood.

Hokuto-san is always on watch for the night, but Sirius-sama ordered us to make sure that the watch was taken in shifts. Although Sirius-sama, who is our master, doesn't have to do it, he properly included himself for the watch, and he usually does it at the most difficult time.

On the contrary, Reese and I slept in the carriage. No matter how many times I told him that he didn't have to do it, he didn't listen. Erina-san would often say, she wished he was more selfish.

But... because Sirius-sama was like that, I wanted to support him. And I happen to love him from the bottom of my heart.

Looking at Sirius-sama's appearance made my sadness that was caused by the nightmare to go away.

"...You can't sleep?" (Sirius)

Even when I showed myself a little, Sirius-sama noticed me and looked back.

I quietly got out of the carriage and sat next to Sirius-sama. Hokuto-san, who was sleeping on my way to him, slightly opened his eyes, but he immediately closed them and turned towards the other direction.

Since he leaked a voice that sounded like a complaint, I leaned against Sirius-sama's shoulder without saying anything.

This was something that an attendant shouldn't do without asking the

permission of the master. If Erina-san saw this, she would get angry. Although I am aware of it, I want... Sirius-sama's kindness.

"Can you not sleep under such conditions?" (Sirius)

I did something improper, but Sirius-sama placed my head onto his lap.

Sirius-sama's lap pillow! Aah... so happy.

...I was happy, but why did Sirius-sama not ask anything? While I had my doubts, Sirius-sama stroked my head with a smile.

"Isn't this weird when you haven't heard about anything?" Emilia)

In order to confirm that, I moved my head a bit.

"I know the reason why you cannot sleep. But, I don't plan to do anything about it. Got it?" (Sirius)

...Sirius-sama really understood me. I firmly looked at that face and nodded because he was looking at me with a slightly serious expression.

"It looks like you understand. Yes, you have to overcome the problem yourself. You probably don't want me to solve your problem, right?" (Sirius)

Yes... this is what I have to solve on my own. I want to support Sirius-sama, and I don't want to rely on Sirius-sama for everything.

I know, but I just want Sirius-sama to pamper me. Despite this, why are you...

"...Are you not angry?" (Emilia)

"You mean about being pampered? Do you want me to say something? I can, if you want me to, but since you are aware of it, it is not necessary for me to be angry." (Sirius)

Sirius-sama gently stroked my head while reprimanding me with a voice that was trying not to complain.

"When you return home, you have to face your past, even if you don't like it. If you are tired at that time, you won't be able to do anything... and it will be meaningless." (Sirius)

What I am afraid of is the shadow of the past. I was trying hard to run away from the problem. However, I do not yet know how the settlement is after it

was attacked by monsters. At that time, I wonder what I will become... if I see it with my own eyes.

But, if I run away, Sirius-sama will surely feel disappointed at me. I don't want that.

"When you are tired, you will naturally think unpleasant things. That is why, now is the time for you to rest to prepare for that time. I will lend you my lap only for today." (Sirius)

"Thank you very much. But... is it only for today?" (Emilia)

"...I will think about it when you have overcome your problem." (Sirius)

"Promise. In order to support Sirius-sama... I will get over it..." (Emilia)

When I realized it, the feelings of wanting to cry faded away and only my endearing feelings remained.

I am an attendant and disciple of such a great person. In order to declare these feelings in my heart, I have to overcome the past.

But now... let's accept Sirius-sama's words.

I was wrapped by the smell of the person that I love, and I fell into a deep sleep.

— Sirius —

In addition to Garve, we left the silver wolf tribe settlement to where the carriage was left behind.

Although we had to go through the forest to reach to the siblings' hometown, we would be able to approach by using the main road, just like when we escorted Aery-san.

"Hmm... it's a splendid carriage." (Garve)

"It is our house, Jii-chan. It's small for everyone to sleep in, but it is comfortable." (Reus)

"However, I'm not going to ride it." (Garve)

Since Garve also worshipped Hokuto, it was too much for him to get on the carriage that Hokuto pulled.

As we secured the carriage, which was still in safe condition, we returned to the main road and started traveling to the sibling's hometown.

We were attacked by monsters and thieves on the main road, but they were being easily brought down by the combination of Garve and Reus. When fighting together, Garve's true nature was well expressed.

"Hey, look, isn't that silver wolfkin on a trip? Although he is an old man, he seems likely to sell at a high price." (??)

"There is a brat, but there are women too, you know? I want to train them to call me master... buhhh!?" (??)

"Do you want to die, brat?" (Garve)

In short... he had no mercy, except for his kin. Especially against those who aimed for Emilia, they were beaten about an extra five times. He seemed to be trying to hide his affection towards them until he mourned for his son.

The journey went well, while being amazed by Garve's behavior.

There were no particular problems on the first day, but during a break on the second day... it turned out that a little problem was occurring when I was preparing lunch.

Reese, who was helping me with the cooking, looked around once, and after she confirmed that nobody was around, she talked to me.

"Sirius-san. Actually, Emilia is a bit..." (Reese)

"Aah. I was thinking to listen to her because she didn't seem to be well. Can you tell me what happened?" (Sirius)

"Yes. In the middle of night..." (Reese)

Currently, there were only Reese and me around the carriage, since Emilia and the rest had headed out to gather some ingredients. Hokuto didn't care, even if he heard it, so there was no problem.

It seemed that she was suddenly hugged by Emilia when she was sleeping. It felt like they were having a good relationship when I listened to her, but from Reese's perspective, her conditions appeared to be abnormal.



“Emilia was trembling a lot. She hugged me for quite some time, and she could only calm down after I stroked her back and head. It appears she couldn’t sleep well until morning.” (Reese)

“Did she mutter something like, ‘Okaa-san’?” (Sirius)

“Yes, she did. Could she be...?” (Reese)

“It is what Reese thinks. Emilia is scared because she dreamt about the nightmare of her past.” (Sirius)

Although it was a story of a few years ago, she was in that same situation for several days after I picked up the siblings and they got along with me. Emilia would occasionally get frightened when she remembered a dream she had about the past, and she would slip into Noel’s or Erina’s bed.

But after one year had passed, the dreams that made her frightened had completely disappeared. She regained her original cheerfulness and she worked hard on her training.

She was reverting back to the circumstances of the past. It might have started when she was approaching her hometown, but the trigger was probably when we were helping Aery-san and her child.

“Have you heard about too? About what happened to Emilia’s and Reus’ parents?” (Sirius)

“Yes... and it was in front of her. I haven’t seen Emilia being frightened to that extent. If Sirius-san consoles her...” (Reese)

“Unfortunately, that is not possible.” (Sirius)

Her parents being eaten right in front of Emilia was her deepest trauma. Even though she could forget that pain, the wound still remained and didn’t disappear.

Even if I console her, she would cry again whenever she remembered it. It’s going to be repeating again.

She had less of a chance to deal with the past when she was a child... but now is different.

Emilia had reached an age, commonly referred to as an ‘adult’ by the general

public, with a trained body and mind. And now, she was returning to the place that was related to her. It was time to overcome the trauma with her own feet.

“Emilia has to get over it on her own. Otherwise, she will continue to be frightened because of nightmares, no matter how many times she sees them.”  
(Sirius)

“Is... that so? I wish I could do something.” (Reese)

“Fortunately, she is aware of it. She wasn’t being pampered to the point of relying on us, and she needs to rest her mind and body properly.” (Sirius)

Although Emilia came to me, there was also Erina’s teaching of not depending on me. Because of that, I casually advised her that it would be best to maintain her physical fitness in order to calmly confront the trauma.

When Reese heard about me moderately pampering her, she was laughing as if she was misunderstood.

“Ahahaha... what shall I do? Emilia’s trembling was somewhat cute, so I spoiled her yesterday.” (Reese)

“Aah... Sorry about that, Reese. It will be fine to observe the situation today. But, it seemed better if Reese pampers her. She is reverting to something like a baby, isn’t she?” (Sirius)

“Sirius-san can also pamper her, you know?” (Reese)

“I will rely on you, sometimes.” (Sirius)

“Eh!? Y-yes. Anytime... I will be waiting for you.” (Reese)

Reese probably didn’t think such a reply would be returned, she was smiling while being surprised.

By the way, even though I said that about child retrogression, it was actually not a joke and I was half serious. She was called as a Saintess. Although she was not equal in terms of Erina, she had the capacity to reassure people with her smile.

If she kept pampering her, it won’t be good for the other person. I also had to be careful.

“It is severe, but I want Reese to bear it too. And, if you feel that I am saying something strange, feel free to say something. Because I might make a mistake.” (Sirius)

“If you care about Emilia to that extent, I have nothing to say. Besides, it is not a mistake for someone who says that.” (Reese)

“Thank you. Perhaps even today, Emilia may suffer, and if that does happen, please take care of her.” (Sirius)

“No, I think that child will go to Sirius-san, more than me, today.” (Reese)

Reese had a mischievous smile when she wished the best for me.

And she was right on the mark.

—

Like when we headed for Aery-san’s settlement, we departed from the main road, led by Garve. We went to a place where the carriage could enter and made camp.

Then, we ate dinner and decided the order of the watch, as usual, and went to sleep. Later, it seemed my turn came when Garve woke me up.

My watch time was in the middle from the overall list, and it was also the most difficult time. But, I was the best candidate to activate spells and recover in a short amount of time, even on a sleepless night. The siblings said that I didn’t have to watch over them, but I didn’t plan to listen to them because I thought that I am not qualified to be called their Shishou if I skipped this task. Besides, it was an important time for the siblings, so I had to reduce their burden as much as possible.

As I shook off the sleepiness, I folded the blanket and drank some water. Garve appeared to be praising me while narrowing his eyes when we were passing each other.

“...You’re really different.” (Garve)

“Well, I just live the way I want to live.” (Sirius)

“Heh... those kids, they were lucky to meet you.” (Garve)

Garve slept in a place slightly away from the firewood. After I confirmed that Reus was sleeping nearby, I sat in front of the kindling fire and threw in some firewood.

When I was about to extend my hand to brush Hokuto's head, who was sitting down next me and became a backrest since some time ago, I felt a presence. When I looked back, Emilia was looking at me from the carriage.

As expected, she couldn't sleep after all. She sat beside me without saying anything. She, then, clung to my shoulder with a look that was about to cry at any moment.

Although she was acting like a spoiled child to me, she never showed it in front of the others, especially Reus. Even though Reus and Garve were sleeping a little ways away, this behavior was not like Emilia. It was proof that she was shaken.

I won't say anything from the earlier discussion, but I guessed it was fine for her to cling onto me after waking up from a nightmare. It was just as Reese said.

At this kind of time, if it was Erina or Noel... it would be a lap pillow. Because of that, when I brushed Emilia's head, which was on my lap, she had visibly calmed down.

"...Are you not angry?" (Emilia)

She was scared, but she still asked. I would complain if I was angry. Since she realized that, I shouldn't be angry.

After she told me what she needed to say, Emilia was quietly sleeping. This will allow her to get the minimum amount of rest, and she would probably be fine tomorrow. There was no need to worry about Emilia getting cold because Hokuto used his tail as a blanket.

Emilia was suffering so much, unlike Reus, who was sleeping like a normal person.

It didn't mean that Reus had no feelings. In his case, it was probably because of his personality. He also didn't see the moment when his parents were eaten, and he probably regarded Erina as his second parent. In the case of Emilia, rather than a parent, she was an attendant for a master.

It's just that... this was certainly not normal. She was unusually sensitive to monsters. Although it was not as much as Garve, there were many occasions where she would attack monsters beyond necessity. I managed it somehow with the 'House' command, but when I think about it, I will have to think of a method to forcibly stop her with [String] soon.

And that Garve, he was watching this secretly while pretending to be asleep. However, he seemed to understand that he shouldn't speak, so he closed his eyes without saying anything. It appeared that he let me to take care of the things about Emilia.

Although I'm a bit worried about the future, we had no choice other than to head towards their hometown.

And now, I was just watching over a child who was sleeping on my lap, trying to overcome the past.

—

In the morning, we hid the carriage again and headed out.

According to Garve, we were likely to reach the settlement before noon, if we moved at our present speed. There was a small valley on the way. Unlike the one on the way to Garve's settlement, we went through it without any problems.

However... the situation had suddenly changed beyond the big river. The number of monsters had started to abnormally increase.

Until we arrived here, I barely noticed the monsters attacking us due to Hokuto's intimidation, but they came to attack us more frequent after we crossed the river.

"Take care, the number of monsters will increase from now on! Let's do it!"  
(Garve)

"Leave it to me, Jii-chan!" (Reus)

"I'm going too!" (Emilia)

The monsters appeared every time we took a few steps, but since they were knocked down by the silver wolfkin family, there was almost no case of our

progress being halted. Although it was unworthy, we decided to ignore every monster drop, except for the rare ones. It was because there was no limit to the monsters that appeared one after another as we tore off the raw materials.

While seeing the whole picture, I gave instructions. And I shot monsters with [Magnum].

“Emilia, Reus, step back! Hokuto and I will take over.” (Sirius)

“Eh? We still can fight, you know?!” (Reus)

“Yes, we still...” (Emilia)

“Did you think that I didn’t realize that your breathing is starting to get disturbed? Step back and take a break.” (Sirius)

Since Garve seemed to be fine, I ordered the siblings to stay back and went ahead with Hokuto. Nevertheless, rather than Reus, it was a bit unusual for Emilia to grandly move ahead on her own, compared to her normal assault method.

While confirming that the siblings were receiving a drink from Reese, I swung my sword against the approaching monsters.

When Hokuto and Garve’s fist blew away the last monster and almost annihilated the enemies, Garve was frowning while muttering alone.

“...That’s weird.” (Garve)

“What do you mean? It is going well, so far, but tell me if you have something in mind.” (Sirius)

“The number of monsters is too few. If I compare this to the past, there were a few times more monsters attacking when I came here before.” (Garve)

“Wouldn’t the number decrease since Jii-chan knocked them down? Maybe they are running away...” (Reus)

“Shall I do a thorough check?” (Sirius)

As I closed my eyes, I invoked a slightly more precise [Search] to confirm the response of the monsters from here and there, but I could hardly see more flocks than before.

I didn't think the number was small, but with that number, it wasn't something that made the attempt by the silver wolf tribe, including Garve, to be abandoned.

"Garve's right... the number of monsters is not that many. There will be no problems if things continue like this." (Sirius)

"Is that so? I am a bit concern, but if you say so, let's proceed." (Garve)

Looking from aside, my [Search] spell that detects magical response is a spell that can't be seen with the eyes, and it does look suspicious. However, Garve started walking without questioning anything. I was saved since Garve unconditionally trusted me, maybe it was because we had a match before.

As we proceeded through the forest, while plucking the vines and branches that were growing thick, Emilia, who was staying at the rear and was taking a break, came close to Garve and called out to him.

"Ojii-chan, how far is the settlement?" (Emilia)

"Just a bit further. We will reach the settlement once we leave this place." (Garve)

As what Garve said, when we walk passed some big trees, the trees there were cut as if the forest was cleared, and we reached the remains of a settlement where people once lived in.

I didn't feel any signs of people in this abandoned settlement.

After so long, the siblings were finally...

"...We have returned, right?" (Emilia)

"Yeah. Jii-chan, our house... is gone." (Reus)

The hometown that the siblings were finally able to return to... was completely destroyed.

Most of the houses were destroyed, but some of the original shapes remained and where abundant with overgrown weeds and vines.

Tears overflowed from the siblings' eyes as they stared at their hometown that had completely changed from the time they lived there.

“...I’m sorry. I can’t do anything... but let us grieve together.” (Reese)

“Reese...” (Emilia)

“Reese-ane...” (Reus)

Unable to bear it any longer, like those siblings, Reese was crying while embracing them. As someone who they thought of as their family, the siblings accepted her gentleness of grieving and they cried together.

“Finally... I reached this far. Felios... you were here, right?” (Garve)

Garve walked to the place that seemed to once be a plaza. He then sat down and lowered his head. He also needed to arrange his mind, so I should leave him be for now.

Everyone seemed to need a bit of time to settle down, but this place was not a safe place. I stroked Hokuto before giving him some instructions.

“I’ll depend on you, Hokuto.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto barked as if he was saying to leave things to him, he kicked the ground and jumped into the surrounding forest. I instructed Hokuto to deal with the nearby monsters, and leave markings to prevent them from getting closer.

And what I could do now was to eliminate any hindrances that could disturb those who were mourning for the deceased. The monsters that approached before they could be dealt by Hokuto, were secretly shot by [Magnum].

I should also grieve together with my disciples, but somebody needed to take care of the surroundings.

Besides...

“...Sorry.” (Sirius)

Even though it was such a miserable situation... I’m already used to it.

Compared to the mountains of dead bodies that I had seen over and over again on the battlefields of the previous life, there were no dead bodies left at the moment... even though it was a realistic impression, priority must be given



to our safety, rather than that. It was a habit I acquired in order to survive, and I can't fix it by any means.

'That is why I can't grieve together with you guys', that mutter leaked out from such emotions.

And then, the moment I activated [Search], while Hokuto exterminated the surrounding monsters on his own— I shouted.

"Ready for battle!" (Sirius)

Whether it was a result of training, the disciples, whom were crying, wiped away their tears and held their weapons in their hands. Before I shouted, Garve had already prepared his posture, and he was staring at the direction where there was a reaction.

"Sirius-sama! Is it a monster!?" (Emilia)

"Yes, it's coming!" (Sirius)

With my voice as a signal, Hokuto jumped out like a bullet from between the trees and landed in front of us, he was glaring and growling at the forest.

Along with the earth trembling, it made its appearance while knocking down the trees of the forest.

"What the heck is that!? There was no such monster when I last came!" (Garve)

"Do you know it, Aniki!?" (Reus)

"If I'm not mistaken... that is a Dyna Rhodia<sup>[1]</sup>." (Sirius)

It was a subspecies of a dragon with strong legs that could run at high speeds on the ground, but was unable to fly in the sky.

It looked similar to the Tyrant species seen in the previous life, but its body size was several times bigger than Hokuto. The legs supporting its huge body were abnormally developed, and long nails were extended from its thick arms. There were countless sharp fangs on its huge jaw that could easily swallow and chew a human in one bite.

Such a huge monster was looking at us and loudly roared, getting ready to

attack.

“Awoooo—!” (Hokuto)

That roar was powerful enough to intimidate intermediate adventurers, but Hokuto offset it with a howl at the same time.

Although Hokuto might be able to fight against the monster alone, I told him not to force himself. He was faithfully on guard and lured the monster here.

Besides, even if his howl couldn't prevent it, we didn't train to falter from this degree.

“Tactical Alpha! Pay close attention!” (Sirius)

“Understood, Aniki! Jii-chan, I am from the left!” (Reus)

“Uhhh, I take the right.” (Garve)

“I can do [Aqua Pillar] anytime!” (Reese)

Tactical Alpha is a basic formation for us, which Reus and Hokuto become the vanguard, while the rest give support. Besides replacing the role of the siblings and Hokuto, there were other kinds of formations, such as Bravo and others.

And then, when the vanguards tried to attack with the usual formation...

“No... NOOOOOOO—!?” (Emilia)

...For a moment, I didn't know who that was.

When I turned around, Emilia had a pale face. She was scared, holding her head down and crying.

Reese immediately approached and shook Emilia's shoulders, but her cry didn't stop.

“What happened, Emilia!? Hey, what's wrong!?” (Reese)

“Noooo! Stop! Don't go, Okaa-san!” (Emilia)

I quickly understood when she shouted for her mother.

When I thought about it, it wasn't surprising for the monster that attacked her parents to stay around.

In other words, this Dyna Rhodia was...

“Reus! Garve! That monster is the one that attacked Felios and Rona!” (Sirius)

I was convinced that it was one of the monsters that attacked the settlement, and ate their parents in front of her.

When the old man and his grandchild knew the enemy of their family, they clenched their fists and glared at the monster while releasing an overflow of bloodlust.

“This guy did that to Tou-chan and Kaa-chan...” (Reus)

“It was... you bastard...!?” (Garve)

Having an obvious murderous intent, they both rushed at the Dyna Rhodia.

I thought that they would attack from the front, since they were angry, but they were calmer than I thought. They separated to the left and right and attacked from both sides of the monster at the same time.

The Dyna Rhodia showed a moment of hesitation, before it turned its face to target Reus, who was approaching it slightly earlier. At that instant, Garve’s speed dramatically accelerated.

“The enemy of my son!” (Garve)

Garve’s fist hit the side of its face, and the Dyna Rhodia’s head was greatly shaken. Through that gap, Reus slip into its chest, and swung his greatsword while aiming at the neck and torso.

“Arrghh!” (Reus)

Reus’ greatsword slashed the monster’s skin, but the force was lost to the extent that the sword sunk into its skin, and the sword was stopped while being buried into its body.

Reus was surprised and he immediately tried to pull the greatsword out, but it was really stuck. The monster regained its posture at that time. And then, it swung its nail towards Reus, who was trying to pull his sword out.

“Like I’m going to let you do that!” (Garve)

Garve went around and released an uppercut at the monster’s arm to deviate the trajectory. At the same time, I stretched my [String] and wrapped it around

the greatsword and shouted.

“Pull at the same time, Reus!” (Sirius)

“Thanks, Aniki! Ready, set!” (Reus)

When we pulled the [String] together with Hokuto, the power of two people and an animal was able to release the sword. While pulling Reus away from the monster, I threw a handmade throwing knife.

The knife stabbed the monster’s eye and sunk into it. The monster roared again while shedding blood from its eye.

Since Hokuto was standing in front of Emilia and Reese in order to protect them, its roar wasn’t offset this time and hit us. Reus and I stopped attacking and defended against the roaring, which was like a shockwave, but there was one person who hadn’t retreated from the monster and didn’t finish attacking.

By the time the monster noticed an enormous mana and bloodlust being felt from its feet, Garve’s special move was on the verge of being released.

“Take this!” (Garve)

When Garve’s special move, [Wolf Fang], struck the monster’s belly, its large body, which appeared to weigh several tons, was blown away and knocked down several trees in the forest.

However, although the Dyna Rhodia took a blow that threw him outside of the settlement, it slowly stood up.

“Impudent...” (Garve)

“Step back, Garve! Let’s go, Hokuto!” (Sirius)

I wanted Emilia to participate in the attack to overcome the trauma, but it was impossible because she was crying, even now. I wanted to re-coordinate the assault, somehow, but since Reus’ and Garve’s attacks didn’t go through, I don’t think I will head out.

At the same time, when I pointed my hand to release [Anti Materiel] and Hokuto made a loud howl, the Dyna Rhodia suddenly turned its legs and ran into the depths of the forest.

““I’m not going to let you run away!”” (Reus/Garve)

“House!” (Sirius)

Reus and Garve rushed out in order to chase the runaway monster, but I forcibly tied them down with [String] while giving them an order.

“Wh-what are you doing, Sirius!? I’m going to kill it!” (Garve)

“Release me, Aniki! The enemy of Tou-chan and Kaa-chan is running away!” (Reus)

“Calm down! Your attacks didn’t really work, you know!?” (Sirius)

““Uuh!?”” (Reus/Garve)

It easily received Garve’s killer technique, and held Reus’ sword when it was cut to the point that it didn’t come out, so there was no doubt that there was some secret on the monster’s body.

Dyna Rhodia is a considerably rare monster, so there was little information about it. What I know about Dyna Rhodia was its ecology, its strength matched its large body, but I didn’t know that weapons weren’t really effective against its body. Although there was a way to defeat it, according to a certain book, the method was to hit it with a massive amount of continuous long range spells... the information wasn’t very helpful.

And because of Hokuto and my intervention, it understood the handicap and that established the theory. It was a troublesome monster in various ways, but I was grateful that it pulled away before inflicting any damage.

As the two regained their composure, while being tied up, I decided to ask their opinions, since they had directly fought the monster.

“Have the both of you calmed down? I would like to know what you thought after fighting that monster.” (Sirius)

“Uhhh... yeah. My [Wolf Fang] definitely hit it, but it felt strange. Although I hit at one point, I felt the impact spread throughout its body.” (Garve)

“I also didn’t feel too much when I slashed its flesh. The sword carved into it and some unknown force pushed it back. It’s as if its whole body was alive... sorry, I’m not sure how to explain it.” (Reus)

“No... I understood it, somehow.” (Sirius)

Summarizing their opinions, it spread the impact that it received throughout its whole body and resisted the weapons that try to penetrate its body. In short, the blow from Garve’s battle style was fatally incompatible. Their attacks didn’t have any effect. Reus’s father, Felios, who was as strong as Garve, also lost.

Although Reus’ sword managed to slice it a little, apparently its flesh enveloped it and resisted the sword. I was not sure whether the monster did that consciously or unconsciously, but it was like a lump of rubber or something.

As for the countermeasures, it needs to be stabbed with a sharp-pointed weapon, such as a spear, or the body needs to be slashed quicker than it can respond, I think?

[Magnum] was unreliable, but it seemed that I can do it with [Anti Materiel].

But... there is no point if I killed that monster.

Therefore, Hokuto and I were trying to support them without helping them too much, but their attacks didn’t get through. Plus, there was a child who should be fighting against Dyna Rhodia, but she couldn’t do it.

“Sirius-san, Emilia is...” (Reese)

“I know it. Are you alright, Emilia?” (Sirius)

“Ah... Aah...”

When I turned around, Emilia had crumbled down and was being consoled with her shoulders embraced by Reese.

I approached those two and bent down in front of Emilia. When I matched her eyes, she slowly raised her head. It was confirmed that she was depressed with tears on her face.

“Okaa-san... Otou-san... that monster... ah... ahhhh.... Nooo...” (Emilia)

I anticipated that she would be like this because of her hometown, but the problem was the monster.

It would be fine if the monster had already died, but if it was still alive, I

planned to let Emilia do the last blow, after I secretly weakened it.

But... I didn't expect that we would encounter the monster that attacked her parents so soon.

I won't blame Hokuto for leading the monster to us. It was because Hokuto took the most suitable action.

Emilia jumped into my chest like a child, asking for her parents, and she kept hugging me while shedding tears.

"Sirius-sama... Sirius-sama..." (Emilia)

I barely understood her, but it would be tough to fight that monster in such a condition. It wasn't a condition where she could fight very well, even if she could think normally.

But... Emilia repeatedly said that she wanted to support me.

And if she wanted me to regard her as a disciple, I want her to overcome the past on her own and live with confidence.

It seems that the time has come for her to make her own decision.

—

## Presenting Hokuto

(I'm sorry, but Hokuto is busy with marking his territory, so I will take a day off. However, please enjoy these images, since I took photos where Hokuto does his marking.) (News presenter)

※ Please portray the images in your mind.

Scratch... scratch...

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Warning... people who can't portray are not up to Hokuto's level.

(I'm going.) (News presenter)

1. The name in raw is ダイナローディア



# Chapter 73 – Things that can be done as a Shishou

---

After the Dyna Rhodia had fled, Emilia was tired from crying and went to sleep, while I told Garve and Reus about the information that had been proven.

Dyna Rhodia

Although it is a dragon species, it runs around on the ground without having the capability to fly in the sky. It takes advantage of its strong toes and strength to chase its prey and eats them.

It is a ferocious monster that can also be called a small disaster, but because of its scarcity, it is rarely encountered.

Although it doesn't make a flock and only a few of them inhabit an area, it is said that the Dyna Rhodia are only active once a year, and only for a few days.

It will dig into mountains and create holes where people can't come closer and sleep deep inside the ground. When it wakes up from its slumber, it becomes ferocious because of intense hunger. Thus, it attacks monsters and people at random.

After it fulfills its hunger for a few days, it will fall asleep again.

Maybe, the Dyna Rhodia that we fought earlier was the same as the monster that attacked Emilia's and Reus' hometown. It wasn't confirmed wherever the monster was or whether it migrated from a distant place, but will it be enough to say that it is a monster that will keep attacking until its hunger is satisfied?

Maybe that was probably the reason why there were only a few monsters around as we made our way to the settlement.

"...Well, that's what I understood from the assault earlier. What do you guys think?" (Sirius)

"I am not sure about the small details, but I think there is no mistake that it had attacked other monsters, since I could smell various kinds of blood from it."

(Reus)

“Yeah, I also concur. By the way... can you release us at once?” (Garve)

It had been around an hour since the attack. However, both of them were tied up with [String] and were rolling on the ground.

This was because they were too agitated when they saw the enemy. If I released them, they would surely chase the Dyna Rhodia. That’s why I thought by forcibly making them unable to move, they would cool their heads off.

At first, they tried to sever the [String] but now they understood that it was impossible and that made them calm down. Since the magical thread binding their bodies was transparent, they would look miserable to those who didn’t know anything. Even if the thread could be seen, they were so thoroughly tied that it was like being wrapped in a bamboo mat, they would still look miserable anyways.

“I will release you guys, but you can’t chase the monster, alright?”

“Got it. As Aniki has ordered.” (Reus)

“Understood.” (Garve)

They seemed to be able to fight head-to-head with the Dyna Rhodia, but since it wasn’t worth considering whether their main attacks were not connecting, they should do it together with me and Reese, who can use spells.

I erased the [String] and released them. To be safe, I kept Hokuto behind them beforehand. Thus, when everyone settled down, we started talking about our future plans.

“Well, that Dyna Rhodia is your enemy. No matter what it takes, it won’t be good if you can’t defeat it. Anyhow, did you think you had a chance to win when you attacked it?” (Sirius)

“...I don’t know. But, if I keep hitting it at the same place, it will definitely be beaten.” (Garve)

“It is not an opponent that a sword can’t cut. If I slash shallowly because I can’t cut it deeply, I won’t be able to kill it, right?” (Reus)

“Garve will have it rough, and Reus is lacking on impact. Besides, you don’t

really have to fight with only the two of you, you know?” (Sirius)

When I turned around to look at Emilia, who was resting on the bed, Reese, who was listening to the discussion while nursing her, put up her fist, asking to leave things to her.

Although she was not good at fighting, she was unusually assertive, maybe it was because of Emilia and Reus. In terms of fighting with that monster, her spirit magic will be reliable.

“There is also Emilia’s and Reus’ friend. Besides, I can do it with my [Magnum], I think?” (Sirius)

“...Sorry, Aniki. I’m sorry, but I don’t want Aniki to help us with that guy.” (Reus)

“Me too, please. That enemy of my son, I want to deal with it with my own hands...” (Garve)

Reus and Garve pleaded while deeply lowering their heads, but I intended to do so from the beginning. Reese also seemed to have a similar thought, but she looked like she had some conditions.

“Understood. However, if there is an injury, I will absolutely treat it. If not... I will submerge it.” (Reese)

“I’m glad, but this is our problem...” (Garve)

“G-got it, Reese-ane! Isn’t this better, Jii-chan? We don’t have to worry about getting hurt.” (Reus)

“Uhhh... alright.” (Garve)

Reus desperately persuaded Garve because he knew that it wouldn’t be good if Reese became angry. Reese was gentle and kind, but the truth was she was a troublesome child when she gets angry.

She said that she would submerge it, but if she went all out, she could make a tsunami, even if it was against a mountain. Spirit magic was as powerful as that. She never got angry that much though.

I probably didn’t have to explain to Hokuto. In reality, he didn’t head out in the fight earlier and moved to protect Emilia and Reese.

“Me too. I don’t plan to put my hands on the Dyna Rhodia, unless it is necessary. That means, there will be three opponents, including Emilia, for that monster, correct?” (Sirius)

“Aniki, Nee-chan is impossible.” (Reus)

“She really can’t fight against it if she is frightened like that.” (Garve)

“The one who decides whether she wants to fight is not you, but Emilia. Here, until she gets up, everyday...” (Sirius)

I tried to say that they should see the situation, but since their eyes were glittering like beasts, I unintentionally closed my mouth.

That was... impossible, I guess.

Even if I held them back here, there was no mistake that they would sneak out to hunt the monster. Since I would be worried if they fought with only two, I’d like everyone to take part in that fight.

Reus pointed at a building in another place that was relatively clean, and then he came up with some plans.

“Nee-chan will rest over there. Look, there is a house remaining that is still in good shape.” (Reus)

“I guess so. I don’t want to see that child cry any more than this. It’s better to leave this place.” (Garve)

“If that’s the case, how about Sirius-san stays here? I think Emilia will feel better if you stay with her until she wakes up.” (Reese)

That’d definitely help. Although I feel a bit uneasy, if there were Hokuto and Reese, they could sufficiently win against the Dyna Rhodia.

But... that doesn’t make any sense.

When Emilia herself directly looked at the Dyna Rhodia, it will be almost impossible for her to overcome her past until the day she fights and defeats it.

Then, the only option was...

“Sirius-san, are you alright?” (Reese)

“Aniki, shall I replace you?” (Reus)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

“I’m alright. You guys should preserve your strength.” (Sirius)

My only choice was... to carry Emilia on my back, and have everyone else challenge the Dyna Rhodia.

—

Even though the Dyna Rhodia had escaped, many trees were mowed down with that huge body, and there were traces of blood, due to Reus’ attack, that had continued on, so the direction of its escape was immediately understood.

The trees became spares after a while, but we continued following the blood and footprints that were used as markers. On our way there, I activated [Search] once and pointed to a nearby mountain.

“The reaction of the monster is coming from the inside of that mountain. There may be a cave at the foot of it or, perhaps, it dug a hole.” (Sirius)

“Your ability is truly amazing.” (Garve)

“That’s Aniki for you. But, isn’t there a possibility of other monsters, too?” (Reus)

“Didn’t my knife get stuck in its eye? So, there is no mistake that the reaction is coming from that monster.” (Sirius)

That throwing knife was a special order made by the Elysian’s blacksmith, Grant. It was a custom-made easy-to-throw knife for me, but since there were not too many of them, I had all of them embedded with magic stones. Even if it disappeared somewhere, it was possible to retrieve it, since I could detect the mana in the magic stones.

As we continued walking to the reaction as a landmark, Reese was looking around and tilted her head.

“Come to think of it, there has been no monster appearance since a while ago.” (Reese)

“Maybe they ran away from the Dyna Rhodia, or were already eaten by it. Due to that huge body, it may be a monster at the top of food chain in this area.” (Sirius)

“Top... is it? But, it’s troubling that my attack hasn’t connected. Same goes for Felios.” (Garve)

“My sword, too. It felt really excruciating for my slash to be stopped until that point.” (Reus)

Although the skills of those two were enough, the opponent this time was incompatible because their weapons and attacks were hardly effective.

It couldn’t be helped in Garve’s case, and if Reus’ sword wasn’t a big sword but an ordinary sword, it might have been in a different situation.

With Reus’ greatsword being huge and broad, following Lior’s specialization, it was easy to get into trouble with the fleshy interior of the body because the large contact area inside of the monster wasn’t only that. If it was a sword specialized for cutting, and not a big sword, it would be enough to cause a fatal injury. It was unknown whether there was such a sword in this world, but if there was, it may be possible to slice it down.

By the way, if it was Lior, I think he could easily slice it in half. He held that much skill, even if he was stopped midway, he had the power to overcome anything with his own power. Since he was in a slightly different ‘dimension’, it would be better to think differently.

“As expected, should I aim for the head? But, it is too severe for an opponent that moves a lot.” (Garve)

“Should I not slice it all the way and stab it? But, if it’s stopped midway, it will not come out...” (Reus)

Reus and Garve were talking about how to cope with the Dyna Rhodia from earlier, but they seemed to be unable to come up with an idea.

I couldn’t let them attack it when they lacked of coping methods, but since it was also an enemy of the Silver Wolf tribe, I thought that I also wanted to proactively give them advice.

“Does Garve have other methods of fighting, other than that killer technique?” (Sirius)

“I can only punch and kick.” (Garve)

“If that’s the case, Garve should act as support. We should leave Reus to attack the Dyna Rhodia.” (Sirius)

Although it won’t be too effective, it was possible to crush its assault, since it could be blown away by Garve’s attack. A tactic that lets Reus slice it, while Garve draws its attention, or blowing away the monster and making a gap, was probably the best.

“Reus, don’t slice it’s thick belly or neck, aim for the tip of the tail or arms. If it is a thin part, you’ll be able to cut the flesh before the flesh wraps around the sword.” (Sirius)

“I see. But it seems that it will take some time to beat it.” (Reus)

“It is inevitable for it to become a long battle with only you guys. That may be demeaning, but you will gradually hurt it. You’ll have regrets if it attacks your settlement later, you know?” (Sirius)

“...That’s fine. Although I am not able to kill it with my own hands, as long as that monster is killed, that is already good enough.” (Garve)

“Leave it to me, Jii-chan! I will kill it.” (Reus)

“Uhhh, alright, but do it good.” (Garve)

When I realized it, Reus and Garve were getting along well, as they bumped their fists together. Normally, Emilia would have joined them, but, unfortunately, she was sleeping on my back.

While confirming their mutual cooperation, I didn’t walk in front of them because I didn’t want this to be heard. I secretly whispered to Reese, who was next to me.

“You will immediately intervene when you feel it’s dangerous. Reese will support them with a long distanced wall. And don’t use [Aqua Cutter].” (Sirius)

“Understood. In the first place, it would be impossible for me to get closer. Leaving that matter aside, how about Emilia? Are we really going to bring her as she is?” (Reese)

“Yes. Even if she can’t fight, there might be some changes if she sees the enemy of her parents being defeated before her.” (Sirius)

However, that was an undesirable result.

It would be best for Emilia to stand up on her own and fight against the monster that was the enemy of her parents. Even if she lost or can't persevere when she challenged the monster, I wouldn't mind if she complained if I killed the monster. In that situation, Emilia would overcome the past and grow stronger.

"It's hard, but you have to try, Emilia. I'll be cheering you no matter what."  
(Reese)

Reese gently brushed Emilia's head, who had a peaceful sleeping face.

—

We discovered a big cave when we arrived at the foot of the mountain.

It was big enough for the Dyna Rhodia to go through and there were also traces of blood and footprints leading into the cave. There was no mistake that it escaped to here.

There was a river flowing inside the cave, and a passageway with a ceiling that was similar to a limestone cave. It was strange to feel the cool and nice atmosphere of a cave. It was pure and pleasant to the extent that you wouldn't believe that there was a monster living inside of it. On the way inside, Reese, who was watching the river flowing beside the spacious passageway, whispered.

"Whether there is a river nearby, the spirits are also active. In this situation, I can fully demonstrate my power." (Reese)

"That's encouraging. Nevertheless, this cave has been here for a long time. The ground is also solid, so there is no need to worry about the cave collapsing, even if the monster goes somewhat rampant." (Sirius)

While examining nearby walls, I didn't feel any possibility for the cave to collapse. It seemed like they would be able to fight with confidence. As the two of them got excited when they heard it, we proceeded into the cave together.

There was a big room at the end of the passageway. It was the size of a dome that was located in some of the major cities of the previous life with an open



space on its ceiling, where blue sky was visible. The sunlight poured into the center of the room, it was a slightly magical spectacle.

There could be traces of historical ruins, but since we were not really historical enthusiasts, we didn't have any plans to explore. What we understood, at present, was that the cave's dead end was here, and that meant that the Dyna Rhodia was completely cornered.

And on top of the stone paving that was spread all over the inner part of the room, there was the Dyna Rhodia displaying its back to us while devouring something. It was probably a monster that was hunted while it escaped to here. The sound of the crunching meats and bones reached even here.

"We finally cornered this bastard!" (Reus)

"That will be the last meal you eat. This time... it's your turn to be hunted!" (Garve)

Their fighting spirits seemed good enough, and they slowly stepped into the center of the open space. The Dyna Rhodia also noticed us. It stopped eating and turned its bloody face in our direction.

The wound from Reus' slash had completely healed when I looked at its belly. Its flesh was sturdy and it absorbed the impact. Plus, it had excellent regenerative ability. I thought that it was a really troublesome opponent.

As I looked at the two stepping forward without feeling afraid, Emilia, who I had carried on my back, slowly woke up. It seemed like she had awakened, so the setting appeared to be in place.

"Aah... Sirius...-sama?" (Emilia)

"Have you woken up?" (Sirius)

"Yes. Sirius-sama's back... It's very warm..." (Emilia)

Emilia understood that I was carrying her, and she was making a spoiled voice while getting closer to my head with a blurry-looking face. It looked like she was still half asleep, she didn't even notice the Dyna Rhodia that was looking at us.

While displaying such a carefree atmosphere, the battle at the frontline was about to start.

“I will attract it from the front. Here I go!” (Garve)

“I leave that to you, Jii-chan!” (Reus)

The moment Reus and Garve kicked the ground and started to run, the Dyna Rhodia turned to the ceiling and released a roar.

“Do you think that such a roar is effective now!?” (Garve)

“I’m going to shred it with my sword!” (Reus)

The roar unleashed a shock wave to the surroundings. It didn’t only reach the entire cave, but also went through the ceiling and reverberated to the outside of the cave. Although neither of them flinched from the roar of that extent... I felt somewhat uncomfortable. This roar seemed to be different from the one that it released in the settlement. Hokuto, who was standing next to me, also had the same feeling. He appeared to be on alert while moving his ears several times.

But the biggest problem was that Emilia, who was sleeping on my back, had completely woken up with that roar.

“Aa...aaahh...Nooo...” (Emilia)

“Get a grip, Emilia! Don’t look away from it!” (Sirius)

Emilia trembled the moment she realized that the enemy was there. She buried her face on my back as if she didn’t want to see it. However, she was calmer compared to before, it was thanks to the fact that she was in close contact with me for the second time. She slowly lifted her face in response to my voice.

“Isn’t that the enemy of your parents? More importantly, you need to fight it. Look at it and don’t turn your sight away.” (Sirius)

“Ye-... yes. I have to take on...the enemy of... Okaa-san... and Otou-san.” (Emilia)

While Emilia’s breathing started to get rough, she started to unravel her hands from my neck, trying to get off of my back.

At that time, the two who were fighting on the frontline were exchanging blows, but they seemed to be slightly struggling, more than what I expected.

Reus had somehow managed to slice a finger on its hand, but the Dyna Rhodia tried to bite him without being frightened at all.

“It went over there!” (Garve)

“Damn, are you not daunted even by this!?” (Reus)

Every time the monster roared because of their offense and defense, Emilia’s gathered fighting spirit was dispelled, and she attached herself to my back again. Although it had been repeated many times already, Emilia kept trying to stand on her own feet without breaking her spirit.

However...

“Jii-chan, it’s dangerous!” (Reus)

“Kuhh!? Until that extent...!” (Garve)

Although they had a break while on our way here, both of them have been continuously fighting since this morning, and they were mentally exhausted because they saw the ruined settlement. Garve was about to be eaten because his concentration was disturbed, but he made a big jump to the side to avoid it.

He was safe, but, then again, it might be difficult for two people.

But, when Emilia looked at that sight, it awoke the mental trauma of the past.

“Aah... Okaa-san... Otou-san...” (Emilia)

The vision of the past came back, and this time, Emilia buried herself into my back and stopped lifting her face up. Reese was desperately trying to encourage Emilia... but, unfortunately, we were already out of time.

I thought that this would be bad for Emilia and Reese, but since I had no time, I thought that I should go for a rough treatment.

“Let’s step back for a bit. Reese too, follow us.” (Sirius)

“Eh!? U-understood.” (Reese)

We turned our backs from the sight of the two people fighting the monster, and we returned to the passageway from the room.

I forcibly put Emilia down from my back in a place where the figure of the monster couldn’t be seen at all. I looked at her, who was still crying. Reese was

anxiously looking from the side, but I told her not to say anything.

As soon as Emilia was put on the ground, she tried to stick to me, but I stopped her by holding her shoulders.

“Noo... don’t leave me...” (Emilia)

“Emilia... do you really want to overcome your past?” (Sirius)

“I want to get over it... I want to! But... no matter how many times I tried... no matter how many times you told me... I am afraid of that monster!” (Emilia)

“Afraid... are you? Don’t you have sufficient capabilities to fight that monster?” (Sirius)

“Even so, my feet... my body... I can’t move them! It might be... impossible for me. Please, Sirius-sama. That monster... Okaa-san and Otou-san’s enemy...” (Emilia)

“Emilia!” (Sirius)

I really yelled at Emilia.

Emilia was shocked because it was the first time she heard me use an angry voice. I put my hands on Emilia’s cheeks, and spoke with a serious expression.

“I will not allow this any longer. I don’t remember bringing up a disciple that is such a whiner.” (Sirius)

“Auu...” (Emilia)

“Are you scared? Is it painful? But for me... it is pointless to run away. Even if I defeat or remove the enemy, you’ll regret it forever if you don’t do anything.” (Sirius)

Although she wanted to get over the past, I understood the frustration of not able to take one step ahead because of fear. However, instead of overcoming it by a stepping stone made by others, she had to get over it with her own feet.

“No matter how scared you are, stand on your own feet and face the monster. I have trained your mind and body, so you can do it.” (Sirius)

“But... still...” (Emilia)

“If you say that you can’t do it...” (Sirius)

I turned my back to Emilia, and talked to her while turning my head around.

“You’re not qualified to be my disciple.” (Sirius)

“!?” (Emilia)

I looked away from her, like I was completely losing interest, and as if I was looking at a stone on a roadside. I left Emilia and walked away.

—

This made me remember, while walking through the cave’s passageway.

The expression of Emilia that I looked at right before I looked back was stained with despair. Even if I said that she wasn’t qualified to be my disciple, it didn’t mean that I abandoned her. It’s just that the title of disciple would be no more. Since it didn’t change the fact that she was an attendant, she would still be by my side.

But she wasn’t proud to be an attendant. She was proud because she was my disciple. Whether that pride was stronger than the trauma of the monster, it would be the key this time. Which was why I purposely push her aside.

However, if she couldn’t stand up and do something... I really won’t forgive her if she called herself my disciple. Whatever happened... it was all depending on Emilia.

The truth was, I wanted to hide and watch her over, but... I had something else to do. Although it couldn’t be helped, I continued walking towards the outside of the cave while sighing, since I had pushed my disciple away.

While I was on my way out, Reese was running and chasing me, as if she had something to say. When I matched my eyes with Reese’s, she was looking at me like she was condemning me, but that also probably couldn’t be helped. It would have been different if she remained there, but when judging the situation, she also seemed to have abandoned Emilia.

“...Will it be fine if you’re not with Emilia?” (Sirius)

“If there is something, the spirits will tell me, so it’s alright. Leaving that aside, why did you say that to Emilia?” (Reese)

“She is still my attendant, so Emilia will still be my side, you know? It’s just

that the title of disciple is no longer applicable.” (Sirius)

“I think Sirius-san knows how important that title is for Emilia. Is there no other way?” (Reese)

“Maybe there is, but I don’t have the time. Afterwards... I will only believe in the strength of Emilia’s heart.” (Sirius)

“...Time?” (Reese)

When I left the cave, while Reese was in doubt, Hokuto welcomed us.

He was already here by the time Reus and Garve started to fight. It seemed that he was preparing something, in the case that I would not make it in time. As expected of my partner. I stroked Hokuto’s head, who was sitting in the direction of the forest. He shook his tail, expressing his pleasure.

“...I more or less understand that you haven’t abandoned Emilia. More importantly, why is Sirius-san and Hokuto leaving? We have to help Reus and Garve-san, don’t we?” (Reese)

“Sorry, I can’t help with that. There are hoardes of monsters rushing towards this cave.” (Sirius)

“Eh!? Why is that?” (Reese)

“That monster... the Dyna Rhodia roared towards the sky just before the fight, correct? That wasn’t a roar of intimidation, it was a special roar that attracted the surrounding monsters.” (Sirius)

After the Dyna Rhodia roared towards the sky, I activated [Search] in a wider range. And then, I captured the responses of nearby monsters coming towards us all at once.

I wasn’t so sure whether it was a call to gather them, but that monster also had this ability. I understood why its other name was ‘Calamity’.

In other words, the incident where the assault on Emilia’s hometown was not caused by nature, but by the Dyna Rhodia. I thought that the Dyna Rhodia was a part of the monsters that attacked the settlement, but it was the culprit.

According to my deductions, that special roar stimulated the enemies and I thought it had an effect to attract others, unconsciously. I didn’t participate in

the battle merely because I felt uncomfortable. However, Reus and Garve, who had received the roar, were clearly becoming more aggressive.

This ability was probably used to gather monsters and eat them more efficiently. The reason why there were so many monsters whenever Garve visited the place was because this Dyna Rhodia occasionally woke up and gathered more enemies, and the rest seemed to be the leftovers.

“I have to tell everyone right away!” (Reese)

“That’s not good. I am not sure whether those two who are fighting inside will listen, and it will still take some time for Emilia to make a decision. I have to hold the monsters here, so that they won’t be a hindrance for them.” (Sirius)

“I will fight too!” (Reese)

“Sorry, I want Reese to take care of Emilia. I don’t know what she will decide, but I want you to stay by the side and watch her. Besides, I’m not alone, you know?” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

The sitting Hokuto stood up and barked while wagging his tail. I made a smile to reassure Reese.

“As you can see, he is a reliable partner, so please, don’t worry. Besides, I am your Shishou. I won’t be done in by the monsters.” (Sirius)

“But... alright. I definitely don’t think that Sirius-san will be defeated by the monsters.” (Reese)

“Yeah, no matter how many monsters around here gather together, it won’t be a problem. I am more anxious about the two who are fighting inside. If Emilia gets back on her feet, I want her to help them as soon as possible.” (Sirius)

Although she nodded, she was, somewhat, dissatisfied. And then, I took off the longcoat that I wore. I thought of taking off the coat, which was an easy-to-move-in battle dress, and leave it in front of the cave, but anyway...

“Reese, if Emilia recovers, please hand this coat to her. There are weapons prepared, and it should protect her from a light impact.” (Sirius)

“...Understood.” (Reese)

Seeing Reese folding the coat and holding it close to her chest, I started warming up while thinking about some plans. Judging from the speed of the monsters, I would be able to see them in a few minutes. I was going to lay traps after I finished warming up, but, for some reason, Reese wasn't moving from the spot.

"What's wrong? How long are you going..." (Sirius)

"Sirius-san..." (Reese)

When I turned around, Reese's face was close to me, and she kissed my cheek. Although it was a light kiss, Reese slowly moved away while blushing.

"Ac-according to the legends told in books, it was said that the Goddess and Saintess gave their blessings through a kiss. I am not a real Saintess, but since I have feelings for you, I think... that is surely a blessing. So... that..." (Reese)

Doing it on her own had made her feel flustered, as if she was going to die at any time. While looking at her flustered condition, A smile naturally floated on my face.

"You don't have to smile!" (Reese)

"My bad. The blessings of a Saintess... I have surely received it. It seems I will be able to defeat the monsters easily from now on." (Sirius)

"I-I don't think there is such an effect, but please don't do the impossible. I'm not sure about Emilia or Reus, but if something happens to Sirius-san, I also... wouldn't like it." (Reese)

"Well then, for the sake of my disciples, shall I emphasize safety first?" (Sirius)

"Yes! Hokuto too, please. You must not... overdo it." (Reese)

"Woof..." (Hokuto)

Finally, I saw Reese return into the cave after she hugged Hokuto.

As time went by, the forest became more noisy. I tried a highly accurate [Seach] to count how many monsters were coming.

"...Oh dear, they have gathered well until now. This much is a lavish feast." (Sirius)



The monsters were displayed in red in the brain radar, but what I saw in front of me was superbly red in color. Even if I made a slight estimation, there were about 200 various sizes.

Nevertheless... I couldn't withdraw.

"Now... let's quickly clear this up because I have to go to see the conditions of the disciples. Are you ready?" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

I looked at the trustworthy Hokuto, switched on the brain switch for battle.

Although the number was small, I already confirmed the appearance of flying monsters in the sky. They would probably reach earlier than the monsters that ran on the ground, so let's start clearing the sky first.

I stretched my hand out towards the sky, while raising my magical power.

"From here on... I won't let even a single one pass." (Sirius)

— Emilia —

"You're not qualified to be my disciple." (Sirius)

When that was said, I was seeing the appearance of Sirius-sama turning around and leaving... I could do nothing but watch him because I was shocked.

And the gaze aimed at me was like seeing a stone lying around here.

As if those eyes were looking at a miserable person, without having any expectations and interests. I felt more scared than I was with the monster.

I didn't like it...

I was sad...

And more than that... it was mortifying for Sirius-sama to make that kind of gaze.

Sirius-sama intentionally pushed me away to cheer me up. But those words weren't a lie. If I couldn't do anything, Sirius-sama would mercilessly give up on me.

I don't want that.

I would like to be able to communicate with each other without having to exchange words, like Hokuto... What am I doing?

If I was stuck with such a thing, I won't be relied on forever. I will be...forever protected.

I want Sirius-sama to depend on me. He won't leave me no matter what happens, sharing joyful things together, supporting him during sad times, and protecting him when he is in danger.

That is the repayment for everything because I was saved by Sirius-sama. I was entrusted by Erina-san, and I sincerely wished for it.

But even so... I was disgracefully crying and clinging to Sirius-sama, and now I was stuck in this place because I was scared of a single monster.

Even though I am ashamed, and feel regret... I can't be help being afraid of the monster that took Okaa-san and Otou-san away. Whenever I saw that appearance, the scene where I could hear Okaa-san and Otou-san being eaten appeared every time.

Many times over... and over... even if I was being cheered up, my body wouldn't move.

"Emilia..." (Reese)

When I noticed... Reese was standing before me while I buried my head between my knees, and I was unconsciously relieved. I was relieved that I was not abandoned.

While feeling miserable, Reese put her hands on my shoulders and gently spoke.

"You see... Sirius-sama went outside of the cave." (Reese)

Even if she said that he went outside, I didn't think that he would run away. I thought that there was definitely something wrong, but I was about to hold my breath because of the words that Reese said next.

"Hordes of monsters are approaching this cave. Sirius-san went outside to stop them." (Reese)

Hordes of... monsters?

At that moment, the scene of monsters attacking my hometown came up. Without being able to endure the mayhem of the numbers, adults were eaten, one by one... and Otou-san...

Those hordes of monsters... and Sirius-sama?

“Why...?” (Emilia)

“It seems that that monster attracts other monsters with its roars. Sirius-san said that it might’ve ran away here on purpose to corner us.” (Reese)

“It can’t be true! Then, why is Reese here? Why are you not fighting together?” (Emilia)

“I wanted to stay with him! However... I was asked to take care of you.” (Reese)

“Aah...” (Emilia)

When I lifted my face with all of these feelings, Reese was watching me with a serious expression.

Yeah... that’s right. Reese doesn’t like to fight, but she wouldn’t come here without saying anything.

“Sorry. Because of me...” (Emilia)

“Even if he didn’t ask me to take care of you, he would definitely tell me to leave. I am worried, but Sirius-san was confident when he said that he would annihilate them, and since Hokuto is also there, I’m sure he will come back safely.” (Reese)

“He is that kind of person.” (Emilia)

“Hehe... he is our Shishou. Say Emilia, is it fine to leave things like this?” (Reese)

“...I don’t want to.” (Emilia)

Sirius-sama was fighting too, but what should I do about this?

That monster was scary.

It was scary, but...

“I don’t want... Sirius-sama... to hate me...” (Emilia)

If I stay just like this, the eyes that he displayed when he was leaving... he would really mean it.

That was... scary.

Compared to the monster... it was... it was...

“Hey, Reese.” (Emilia)

“Yes?” (Reese)

“Hit... me.” (Emilia)

“...I’m really going to do it, you know?” (Reese)

“Please.” (Emilia)

Reese slapped my cheek without reservation. Although Reese wasn’t good at being angry, I felt her kindness when she seriously slapped me.

“That might have been a bit strong...” (Reese)

“It’s alright. Because I have snapped out of it.” (Emilia)

Such pain was natural for me, since I was miserable until now. While appreciating Reese, who didn’t hold back, I breathed out and put some strength on my body.

It’s alright... I can get up this time.

Yeah, when I compared this to the eyes displayed by Sirius-sama...

“Such a monster... it is not scary at all!” (Emilia)

My body didn’t move because my heart succumbed to fear. I was able to get up by suppressing that fear.

I immediately confirmed the circulation of mana. I clasped my fist several times and tried to check my body’s movements. It seemed that I was able to move without any problems.

If that’s the case, I can fight!

“Thanks for waiting, Reese. Let’s go immediately.” (Emilia)

“Where to?” (Reese)

“Of course, we’re going to the Dyna Rhodia, which is fighting Reus and Ojii-chan!” (Emilia)

“Yeah, let’s go! Aah... before that, please wear this.” (Reese)

Reese gave me the long coat worn by Sirius-sama.

The fact that Reese kept this meant that Sirius-sama was going all out.

I can’t lose... either.

“He gave you permission to wear it. I think you should wear it, more than I am right now.” (Reese)

“Thank you, Reese.” (Emilia)

Although it was a little bigger, I immediately put my sleeves through the coat, I strapped on the belt and tightly fixed it.

It was invented by Sirius-sama and custom-made by the Gargan Company. It was light and hardly deterred movement. There was a set of disposable magic stones and throwing knives prepared by Sirius-sama, so the weaponry was prepared.

The most important thing was the smell of Sirius-sama. I understood that this might be just my imagination, but I felt relieved, as if Sirius-sama was watching nearby.

“Let’s go. Let’s defeat that monster and get recognition from Sirius-sama!” (Emilia)

“Yeah, let’s go!” (Reese)

Before running back into the inner part of the cave together with Reese, I looked back towards the entrance once.

I couldn’t see his fighting appearance from here, but if it was Sirius-sama, it seemed that he would defeat them without any problems, even if they were hordes of monsters. Besides, Hokuto was also with him this time. Even if a whole country like Elysion became his enemy, I feel that he was going to win without getting hurt at all.

That's why... it will be alright.

That person will surely come back in front of us with an innocent look.

"Emilia, we were discussing the information about the monster while you were sleeping, but..." (Reese)

"Well, can you explain? I will devise the tactics." (Emilia)

Sirius-sama... please be safe.

I will definitely defeat the monster and overcome the past because I will stay by your side.

—

### **Extra/Bonus 1**

If there was a status window...

"Sirius-san..." (Reese)

※ Sirius obtained a Saintess' blessing.

Motivation has risen by ten.

It feels like... the strength has risen by 20%.

Maybe... the agility has risen by 20%.

I think... the luck has risen by 10%.

[Gluttony] skill is temporarily gained.

[Gluttony] skill is removed.

"Don't you need it!?" (Reese)

"Nope!" (Sirius)

### **Extra/Bonus 2**

Hokuto's feelings

Currently... Hokuto was full of joy.

Even if there were countless monsters coming at him.

He heard from his master that the hordes were slightly over a hundred.

An ordinary person would run away when they realized that, but since the juniors were fighting inside the cave, the master was trying to directly attack them in order to protect the entrance of the cave.

And if the master said he was going to fight, he had no choice other than to fight together with him.

At this time, the juniors were probably fighting in the cave.

In order for the juniors to devote themselves to battle, the master said that the entrance must be defended, and he was waiting for the monsters to come while warming up.

For the sake of his cute disciples, even for him, it was understood that the strength was flowing within him.

But... he was happier because he was able to fight together with his master.

Since he was an ordinary dog in the previous life, he was frustrated many times, not being able to become the strength for his master.

And after being reincarnated, he had fought monsters and robbers many times since he met his master again, but since the master and the juniors cleared them up, there were many occasions where his assistance was less needed.

But now was different.

The master clearly needed his strength. He was glad to be relied on by his favorite master.

If he didn't need to protect the cave, he could clean them up alone.

"Now... let's quickly clear them up because I have to go to see the conditions of the disciples. Are you ready?" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

'Leave it to me', after loudly howling that, he impatiently waited for the master's command.

In order to annihilate the enemies of the master, that was the moment the

strength exploded, Hokuto kept waiting with pleasure.



# Chapter 74 – A Defensive Battle?

---

“Distance... wind... good. Activating... [Snipe].” (Sirius)

The distance was measured by my eyes and when I fired the [Snipe], the extended spell of [Magnum] that’s specialized in aiming at long distance enemies, the mana bullet directly hit the monster’s head. As its head blew up, it fell to the ground.

Since they were furiously moving around, I had decided not to narrow down the targets, and I was always calm whenever I was sniping. Calmly foreseeing the movements, I shot them down, one by one. This action was indifferently repeated only on a number of flying monsters, and I let a breath out after I confirmed that I had shot down all of them.

When approximately forty flying monsters were all shot down, the appearance of the monsters running on the ground was starting to be visible among the trees. The variety of monsters that were coming here included the ones that we had fought before, like the well-known Goblins and walking Lizardman.

Although it wasn’t up to the Dyna Rhodia’s extent, there were several large-sized monsters mixed in. All of them were extremely agitated and single-mindedly coming here.

Hokuto released an overbearing pressure, but since the monsters seemed to be too stimulated, it wasn’t very effective. I intended to let them go if they were intimidated and turned around, but it couldn’t be helped if they were coming at us. Hokuto was waiting for my orders while growling, but his turn would be a bit later.

“Next is to wipe out the small ones...” (Sirius)

What I imagined was a gatling gun.

I had used it in the previous life, so I imagined that I was holding a gatling gun that could shoot thousands of bullets per minute.

In general, a gatling gun was heavy. It was originally a thing to be attached to a gunship or a vehicle. Since the main unit didn't exist when it came to magic, it was only possible to do it manually by preparing each finger, one by one, on both hands.

And then, I spread both hands to release the trigger and the spell would activate.

"Strafe... [Gatling]!" (Sirius)

Mana bullets were shot in succession from both hands, and the monsters where my hands pointed at were shot by countless bullets, one after the other. I slowly spread my hands horizontally, scattering the bullets to clear the surroundings.

The sound of the bullets couldn't be heard since it was a spell. The only sound that reverberated was the sound of blowing winds. However, if I used the real thing, my ears would be temporarily deaf, due to the thunderous roar, and there would probably be countless cartridges falling to my feet.

The bullets' strength and accuracy were dropped to the minimum and they weren't effective against tough monsters, but there were a lot of small monsters, like the goblins. The small monsters were almost obliterated when they got close to the surroundings.

But... because the amount of mana bullets used to suppress them was exhausted, the amount of mana I had hit rock bottom, as was expected when firing thousands of shots, so there was no choice but to suspend [Gatling] before I was able to fire it in front of me.

As the assault was interrupted, the surviving monster came closer, one after the other...

"Hokuto!" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

Without activating [Gatling] in front of me, Hokuto kicked the ground right when I gave him my orders, and he ran off.

Hokuto reached his maximum speed with only a few steps. When he gave a

blow under such conditions, he blew away the small-sized and medium-sized monsters that were stretched out like a meat wall, similar to bowling pins, and then he ran straight ahead towards the large-sized monsters that stood behind them.

The target was a single-eyed giant called a Cyclops. It was a big monster that was said to be a hard fight, even by veteran adventurers, since it was strong and had enough strength to easily mow down large trees. It was more than twice as tall as me, but Hokuto attacked it without hesitation.

When Hokuto, who jumped into its bosom faster than the Cyclops' hurled fist, swung his paw, he scooped out a large amount of flesh from its flank. However, his claws didn't penetrate it that deeply because of the monster's mass, it seemed that it was far from a fatal wound, so it didn't fall down.

But, Hokuto's attack wasn't over yet.

He kicked the tree that he had passed by earlier and hit the monster again from behind. Before the monster could turn around, Hokuto's fangs bit its neck, and the sound of crushing bones was heard.

The Cyclops that was caught by the neck was killed. Before the monster fell to the ground, Hokuto ran and aimed for the next monster.

He tore the Lizardman with claws and broke the monsters' necks with a single blow of its tail. He annihilated the monsters while running around the battlefield the whole time, without stopping in one place.

In the meantime, I restored my mana and shot the monsters that were approaching the cave, one after another, by shooting [Magnum] with both hands. Currently, I was like a fixed gun battery standing in front of the cave.

Since Hokuto mainly took care of the medium and large-sized monsters, my priority was to take down the small-sized monsters.

"Go right!" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

And then, I gave some orders to Hokuto, while watching the whole situation. He moved and went rampant except at a place where I shot [Magnum]. We

steadily reduced the number of monsters.

While doing so, a rabbit monster with high jumping power was knocked down when it jumped and attacked at the same time. During that gap, a single goblin got close to me.

It held a weapon while talking with strange voice, so I immediately switched the weapon on my right hand, and pointed my forefinger and middle finger at the goblin.

“[Shotgun]!” (Sirius)

The goblin that received the mana bullets at close range had its upper body cleanly blown away. What’s left was its lower body part.

Switching to [Magnum] again, numerous stones and spears flew towards me when I was about to aim for my next target, so I changed the orders for Hokuto, while knocking down the thrown stones with [Impact].

“Go left! Prioritize the archers!” (Sirius)

The ones that threw the stones were Orcs, pig-like monsters that walked on two legs. Unlike Goblins, they were clever medium-sized monsters that used weapons that were similar to a human’s, and they stopped moving for a moment when they saw how skillful I was with weapons. Meanwhile, Hokuto jumped into the flock, preferentially aimed for the Orcs that held weapons and knocked them down.

Since more monsters appeared from the direction where Hokuto no longer was, I activated the trap that was set in advance.

“Activate [Claymore]!” (Sirius)

As the name implied, the spell had an image of a Claymore Landmine, where innumerable iron balls charged inside were launched into a fan-shaped range when it detonated.

When it was activated, the mana bullets were scattered in the form of fan shape similar to the real thing. It went through the enemies in a wide range and they became full of holes. By the way, the sphere-shaped mana was put on the ground and the [String] attached was used to detonate it.

Because several of them were set up in advance, they were activated at the same time, and the small monsters that had no defensive means were blown away together with thunderous sounds.

Excluding the place where Hokuto was fighting, the places where the smoke was cleared became a terrible sight because the stretched of trees and monsters were mowed down.

“...Did I go a bit too far? Well, since the outcome was good, I guess it’s all good?” “ (Sirius)

The scenery changed considerably, but it was better, since it became easier to see the monsters.

Medium-sized and large-sized monsters seemed to endure the [Claymore]s, but since they released shock waves as well as mana bullets, they were blown back quite a bit and fell down.

As I was shooting the vital points of the fallen monsters with [Magnum], I turned around, since Hokuto was loudly howling and there were two boar-like monsters with the bodies of regular horses rushing towards us.

Hokuto struck the forefoot and held one of the monsters, but the remaining one was quickly approaching me. I immediately shot [Magnum], but even though the shot hit its head, it didn’t stop its charge.

“Strong? No, did it repel it...?” (Sirius)

Not only was the head of the monster covered with hard skin, it was also a round shape and it seemed that the shot was repelled. Since the effect from the front direction was light, I made a big forward jump and went over the monster’s head.

I flew with my head facing the ground. When I went over its head, I pointed both of my hands and continuously released [Shotgun].

Due to the successive [Shotgun]s being directly released from above, the monster’s back became totally wrecked and its life ended as its body dropped onto the ground. As expected, it appeared that only the front part was sturdy.

However, I was far away from the cave because of the huge forward leap and

I was about to get into the center of the horde of the monsters. Since the drop point was full of spears and swords pointed by the Orcs, I directed my hand to blow them away with magic, but... it looked like that wasn't necessary at all.

“Awoooo—!” (Hokuto)

Hokuto lunged at that drop point and blew all of the standing Orcs with his body. I arranged my posture in midair and hopped on Hokuto's back, who was standing by.

After Hokuto confirmed that I got on his back, he immediately pulled out. He turned around on the battlefield and returned to the front of the cave. He turned around so that I could shoot at a long distance.

After shooting and defeating the monsters and the troublesome enemies, Hokuto, who returned to the cave and let me down, jumped out onto the front lines again and started to rampage.

I occasionally headed out in a similar manner, and the number of monsters was also decreasing, while repeating the hop-and-return on Hokuto. Afterwards, the remaining monsters were a few large-sized.

The remaining monsters were four Cyclops.

Hokuto went out and went against three of them, and the monsters were wonderfully tossed around without being able to follow Hokuto's nimbleness. Since his paw attacks went through them when there was a gap, the conclusion had been decided from that.

At the same time... the one that was aiming at me was somewhat smart. It slowly advanced while protecting its head with its arms. [Magnum] didn't seem to be able to penetrate the skin and muscles of the Cyclops. I shot it a couple of times, but I clearly saw that it could endure it.

I also thought of shooting both of its arms with [Anti Material], but I noticed that I hadn't gone for a melee battle this time. It was mostly a battle with magic.

“I should experience everything.” (Sirius)

All of the monsters had almost been knocked down, so there was no need to

face it in front of the cave.

When I charged directly at it, the Cyclops noticed that the magic attacks had stopped. It undid its defense and swung its right fist at me.

In the case of Hokuto, he jumped into the opponent's bosom earlier than its fist, but, in my case, I adjusted by momentarily dropping the running speed and shifted the timing, and the monster's right fist only crushed the ground before me.

I flew over the body of the Cyclops with its arm as a foothold and stabbed my sword towards its eye, which was the vital point of the Cyclops. However, the monster defended its eye with its left hand, so I suspended the assault, and kicked its shoulder to make a high jump while making preparations, and then I jumped over the head of the Cyclops.

I landed on the ground and the Cyclops slowly looked back, but it was disturbed with the sense of incongruity that was happening with its body.

“Left arm or neck muscles... which is stronger?” (Sirius)

Before jumping overhead, I used [String] to make a loop and connected the left hand with the neck, so when it tried to move the left hand, the neck was squeezed.

I jumped into its bosom towards the gap where one of its arms was occupied as it trembled. Looking at the sturdy abdominal muscles, I hurled a fist loaded with mana.

“[Zero Impact]” (Sirius)

When my fist hit it, an [Impact] was released at the same time. It was a technique that imitated Garve's [Wolf Fang]. Since my strength and mana were combined, instead of just multiplying the power, it was very effective against sturdy enemies because it penetrated the armor and gave a shock.

The Cyclops was in agony, unable to endure the pain from the impact that went through its abdominal muscles. At that time, I jumped and landed on the monster's head.

“I will make you receive it this time.” (Sirius)

And then, I pushed the sword against the Cyclops' eye from above its head. The monster fell onto its back and was killed. If it was this much... Reus, alone, would've been enough.

“Awoooo—!” (Hokuto)

When I looked at Hokuto, he was shouting victory on top of stack of monsters.

However, there was a Cyclops behind Hokuto that seemed to be alive, it was extending its hand to squeeze Hokuto.

It seemed like it was going to be fine, since Hokuto noticed it, but I shot [Anti Materiel], blowing its head off to stop it.

“Carelessness is one's greatest enemy, you know?” (Sirius)

“Woof...” (Hokuto)

Hokuto weakly howled, he walked towards me with a drooping tail. He seemed frustrated.

He might have been a bit careless at the end, but thanks to him, we managed to completely annihilate the monsters. I gently stroked Hokuto's head with gratitude.

“But, you did well, Hokuto. You are truly reliable.” (Sirius)

“...Woof!” (Hokuto)

His feelings probably got better when I stroked him, he tried to rub his face against my chest while waving the tail, but... he stopped when he noticed that his mouth was full of the monster's blood.

“What are you restraining yourself for? If you're not doing it, I will do it for you, you know?” (Sirius)

“...Woof.” (Hokuto)

However, I embraced Hokuto's head, and carefully stroked him. It would be fine to wash away the blood later, so there was nothing to do but to properly praise him.

“The truth is, I'd like to brush you, but it looks like the battle inside is still on-



going. Let's go, Hokuto." (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

I didn't think that there would be any more battles in front of the cave, so I went inside of the cave again.

On our way back, I lightly wiped away the blood on the battle dress in the river inside of the cave, while Hokuto took a dip after jumping into the river. When he got out, and shook his body, there was no more blood on him. I thought that it was a very convenient fur.

"Well then... shall we see how much Emilia has grown?" (Sirius)

"Woof!" (Hokuto)

I had already confirmed Emilia's location through [Search] and I knew that she was about to fight the Dyna Rhodia.

In order to see how she overcomes the mental block, Hokuto and I headed for Emilia.

— Emilia —

Strength was overflowing within me when I wore Sirius-sama's coat. As Reese and I went back into the cave, Reus and Ojii-chan's battle fell into a difficult situation.

"Jii-chan! It's coming here!" (Reus)

"Urgh!?" (Garve)

Although their limbs were still attached, there were scars here and there on their bodies and their movements were getting dull. I was relieved because they had no fatal injuries. They seemed to be obviously tired and there was no break in their movements.

I nodded when I met Reese's eyes, and then we hurled our spells at the same time.

"[Air Impact]!" (Emilia)

"[Aqua Pillar]!" (Reese)

The Dyna Rhodia's jaw sprung up because of my [Air Impact]. Furthermore,

the water column spewing out from its feet had toppled it down.

“Nee-chan!? Reese-ane!” (Reus)

“...You came back?” (Garve)

The two quickly returned to us. I calmly nodded and stepped towards the monster.

To be honest, it was still... scary.

My feet and hands were likely to tremble, but I brought forth the strength within me and forcibly suppressed the trembling.

It was just... I knew something scarier, and the warmth that I felt from Sirius-sama's coat supported me.

It's alright. I... can fight.

“Sorry for making you worry. But, it's alright. I, too, will fight with you...” (Emilia)

“But, you...” (Garve)

“Nee-chan, can you do it?” (Reus)

“Of course!” (Emilia)

During the time that Reese was healing their wounds, I thought about some strategies while observing the monster.

Reus had cut several of its fingers and toes off of its hands and feet, it seemed that it was far from being fatally wounded, since it calmly got its big body up and groaned. Besides, it didn't really take much damage from Reese's and my magic at all. It appeared that the effect was light, with respect to the impact.

After treating the two, Reese stood by me while boosting her mana.

“Yeah... it's going to be alright with this much. So, Emilia, did you see something?” (Reese)

“Well, after all, there seems to be no other choice but to depend on Reus' blow, but I'd like to try with Reese's and my spells first to see if it will work or not.” (Emilia)

“Reese-ane is going to fight too!?” (Reus)

“Yeah. Isn’t Reese our friend, thus our family? There is no way I won’t allow her to join in.” (Emilia)

It was true that I really wanted to kill the enemy of my parents with my own hands. But I didn’t want to turn Reese’s kindness down, so if we were going to beat it on our own, I don’t want to be responsible for getting us injured.

Now, we will combine everyone’s strengths, defeat that powerful monster... and that was it.

“...Understood, Nee-chan. Reese-ane, sorry. Will you fight together with us?” (Reus)

“That was my plan since the beginning. Leave the support and recovery to me.” (Reese)

“Ojii-chan, Reese is going to fight too. Will that be alright?” (Emilia)

“...Have it your way.” (Garve)

That was a sulky response, but he seemed to have approved of it. Ojii-chan went out before me and grasped his fists. It looked like he was going to attract the monster again.

Reus went out next. When they separated to the left and right and rushed towards the monster, it loudly roared and revealed its anger.

The moment I heard that roar, my breathing became ragged and the sight of the past came back.

Okaa-san and Otou-san were eaten by that monster, and this time, Reus and Ojii-chan...

No!

Absolutely not!

I will absolutely not let such a thing happened.

I won’t... let it!

I dispelled the fear by slapping my cheek, and concentrated my mana to use a spell. And then, I took a step forward while trampling the fear, and hurled the

mana towards the monster.

“[Air Slash]!” (Emilia)

First, I released numerous wind slashes to cut down the monster, but all it did was cut its skin without giving it too much damage.

The monster was attacking me probably because it was angry due to the attacks, but Reus struck its side with his sword and stopped his feet.

“This time... take this!” (Emilia)

I released the same [Air Slash], but this time, it was a spell with stronger slashing power and with the number of slashes reduced. The section that was hit directly was cut, but it looked like it still didn't reach the inner part of its body. Since it was a blade of wind, its strong point was that there was no such thing as escaping from these weapons. However, this also seemed to be ineffective.

“I'm here! I won't let here to go over there!” (Garve)

Ojii-chan struck its jaw to draw its attention.

Next, I fired continuous [Air Shotgun]'s at the monster's body, but again, it seemed that the spells didn't do much damage as well.

It was still a spell that penetrated like Sirius-sama's, but it couldn't help kill it without a speed that the monster wouldn't notice... kill?

“I also can defend! [Aqua Wall]!” (Reese)

Since the monster was rushing towards us, Reese produced a number of water walls to stop it. However, the water walls were not thick enough. The monster easily passed through them as soon as it hit the walls.

But, the rushing momentum was lost when it collided against the walls. It was at a walking speed when it passed through the last wall.

“Go over there! [Aqua Pillar]!” (Reese)

When its momentum was lost, Reese activated [Aqua Pillar] from its feet again, and the monster was blown away to the opposite side of the cavern.

She said that her spell was activated with the help of the water spirits, and it

had a tremendous amount of power. No, if the spirits went all out, this much was natural. I was really grateful that Reese was our friend and family.

Anyway, we had time, thanks to Reese. I recalled the two who were in the front, and told them the strategy that I came up earlier, while looking at the monster.

“What are we going to do, Nee-chan? Should I slice it?” (Reus)

“But your sword will be stopped by its flesh. Do you have any other ideas?” (Reese)

“...I do. It is almost same as before, but please do not let the monster get closer to me when I give the signal. And then...” (Emilia)

I looked at Reus and told him.

“Please transform.” (Emilia)

“Eh!? But Nee-chan, that is...” (Reus)

Reus was surprised with my instructions, but when I seriously appealed, he consented and firmly nodded. It seemed that the things that I wanted to say had been transmitted.

Although Reese was also surprised, she attentively watched over us and didn't say anything, maybe because she trusted us.

“Transform? What are you...?” (Garve)

“Ooooo—!” (Reus)

While Ojii-chan was the only person who didn't comprehend the situation, Reus completed the transformation with an outcry.

With bulging muscles, fur grew out from Reus' body and his face became wolf-like. He released a roar that was comparable to the monster. If he was in this state, the speed of his sword swing would increase and it could probably cut its flesh.

But... Ojii-chan had an unbelievable face after seeing the transformed Reus.

“It can't be... Are you... a Cursed Child?” (Garve)

If a Cursed Child appeared in the silver wolf tribe... there was a law saying that

they must be killed.

I heard from Aery-san that, in the past, Ojii-chan killed his friend, who became a Cursed Child, with his own hands. And Otou-san, too, he killed his friend, who became a Cursed Child in front of me.

Because of that, Reus must be killed according to the law. The reality of killing one's own relatives flashed back, and I also understood Ojii-chan's unbelievable feeling.

But, I also left it in the past.

I couldn't choose between killing or being separated in those days, and I could do nothing but cry. Whichever I chose, we would be separated in the end.

"Ojii-chan, the law of killing a Cursed Child is..." (Emilia)

"Jii-chan, such a law of killing a Cursed Child..." (Reus)

But... Sirius-sama stopped everything with a single word.

""It is nonsense!"" (Emilia/Reus)

When Sirius-sama said that the law was nonsense, he was laughing with his nose, we were together even though we were supposed to be apart.

We swore under the moon that we would be together with such an important person.

That was why, if Sirius-sama said it was nonsense, we, too, would say the same thing.

Besides, whatever he was or whether he was a Cursed Child, Reus was Reus. Thus, there wouldn't be any problems if we could walk, worry and laugh together.

"Nonsense... you said? Are you saying that the law is nonsense?" (Garve)

"That's right. What Ojii-chan is worrying over is something nonsense to us. Instead of that, it is more important to beat that monster." (Emilia)

"Nee-chan is right! Since it is nonsense, just shut up and watch, Jii-chan!" (Reus)

"We will take care of Okaa-san and Otou-san's enemy, so, please, rest

assured. Well then..." (Emilia)

Since he was still in shock, we left Jii-chan and headed out.

The monster was rushing towards us, but since the explanation of the strategy hadn't been completed yet, Reus swung at its shoulder with his sword while laughing, and then he turned around.

"I'm going to try a spell, so please, fight without reservation, until I give the signal. When I give the signal..." (Emilia)

"I won't... let it get close to Nee-chan. Leave it to me!" (Reus)

"Let me add a bit more, it's not good if the monster is too far away from me. Fight well!" (Emilia)

"Eh!? Don't say such a difficult thing! But, I got it!" (Reus)

"Please, Reus. Don't miss the chance." (Emilia)

After the briefing was over, Reus rushed forward and attacked the monster.

The monster opened its mouth to bite its prey, but since the speed of the transformed Reus had greatly increased, he jumped into its bosom before the monster opened its mouth.

And then, the sword, swung with full power, tore the monster's flesh. It was completely torn off without stopping.

"Alright, if it's this much, I can do it!" (Reus)

Reus was pleased, but the enemy was too big and that didn't give it a fatal wound. As expected, I had no other choice but to use *that*.

I stopped at once, and then adjusted my breathing and focused my mind.

What I was going to release was a single wind blade.

Unlike the previous ones, it was thin... sharp... a deadly blade that would be released quickly.

"...[Air Slash]" (Emilia)

The wind blade that was released tore the monster's belly and a lot of blood spewed out.

By concentrating the mana and thinning the wind blade to its limit, the blade cut very deep and the monster roared in agony. The blow seemed to be quite effective, but that current spell was far from the real thing.

But now, I could grasp the feeling. I thought I should release it for real next time, but my mana was exhausted beyond my expectations. I dropped to my knees, while being unable to bear the condition of my body.

“Nee-chan!” (Reus)

“Aah...” (Emilia)

The monster that saw the current blow as a threat was approaching me, so I tried to get closer to hit it with magic, but I fell to my knees again and the reaction was delayed.

I could do nothing but watch as the monster’s jaw opened up to eat its prey, and when those fangs tried to bite me...

“I won’t let you do it... to my grandchildren!” (Garve)

Ojii-chan interrupted the monster with a [Wolf Fang] from the side, and I got out from the crisis.

The monster was beaten back by Ojii-chan’s deadly technique, rolled on the ground, crashed against the wall and stopped moving. In the meantime, since Ojii-chan held out his hand, I grabbed that hand and got up.

“Ojii-chan.. thank you.” (Emilia)

“Don’t mention it. If I wasn’t stupid, you probably wouldn’t have encountered such a dangerous situation.” (Garve)

“But, you helped me. Besides, your grandchild is...” (Emilia)

“That is... a-anyway! You guys were right, the law about the Cursed Child doesn’t matter anymore now. The only thing that matters now is killing that enemy, and that’s alright. Dear me, you guys really have a good Shishou and friend.” (Garve)

Ojii-chan’s left cheek was reddening when I saw him. That made me suddenly remember. When I turned my eyes to Reese, she nodded in satisfaction while waving her right hand. It wasn’t only me, Ojii-chan was there... Reese was also,



somehow, doing great.

During that time, the monster moved again and approached us. Ojii-chan, then, turned to Reus and loudly shouted.

“I will create an opportunity! Use your sword to pin its tail onto the ground!”  
(Garve)

“!? Got it, Jii-chan!” (Reus)

Ojii-chan made a big jump over the monster’s head. But, there was no reason for that monster not to aim at a defenseless prey in mid-air. Large amounts of water gushed out, from Reese’s [Aqua Pillar] spell, at the feet of the monster that was waiting for Ojii-chan to fall into its wide open mouth.

The balance of the monster was disturbed because of the water. When Ojii-chan struck its unprotected back, the monster was beaten down to the ground, while creating tremors.

As it was hit onto the ground, the tail of the monster also touched the ground. Without missing the opportunity, Reus stabbed his sword, aiming at the base of its tail, and the monster was pinned to the ground.

“Nee-chan!” (Reus)

“Leave the pinning down to me!” (Garve)

“Thanks, I’m going!” (Emilia)

The monster raged and attempted to pull the sword out, but Reus was holding it down with all his might. Although there was a difference in physical strength, it could be done with the transformed Reus.

Moreover, since it was attacked by Reese and Ojii-chan, the monster was completely held down on the spot.

While confirming my remaining mana, I slowly approached the monster.

What I imagined was... the technique that was shown to me, in the past, by Sirius-sama.

In the past, when we went to the school in Elysion, Sirius-sama gave advice to the blacksmith, Grant-san, on how to make a certain weapon.

It was a sword called... a Katana, but it was thin, unlike the sword that Reus used, and it was a difficult sword to use.

But, when the Katana was put away inside a scabbard, the technique Sirius-sama used was... exactly like a blade of wind. I thought that the terrific cut was dreadful, but when he swung it for a couple more times, the Katana broke.

It seemed the strength was weak because there wasn't a thing called Tamahagane<sup>[1]</sup>. Eventually he seemed to give up the creation of the Katana, but I thought that the technique could be reproduced by the Wind, so I asked Sirius-sama many questions and tried it. But... the result didn't turn out satisfactory. I thought that my ability wasn't enough at that time.

But, if it's the present me...

I lowered my back after approaching the monster, taking a stance similar to what Sirius-sama showed me when he swung the Katana. It was a few years ago, but I could immediately remember if it was Sirius-sama.

All of my remaining mana was concentrated on my right hand, rather than releasing a blade of wind... I deeply imagined cutting it with a knife.

Now, there was a thin... thinner than earlier... and sharper blade like a katana held on my right hand.

"Now, Emilia!" (Garve)

And then, Ojii-chan uppercutted the monster's jaw. Aiming at the exposed unprotected belly... I released my right hand that I put on my waist.

It seemed that the name of that the technique taught by Sirius-sama was Battojutsu<sup>[2]</sup>.

And what I released was not a Katana but a blade of wind.

Thus, the name of the spell that held these two points was...

[Batto Kazaha<sup>[3]</sup>!]

—

Presenting Hokuto

It seemed Hokuto-kun was increasingly fired up today.

First, at the beginning of the battle, the Master shot the monsters one after another with a spell that imitated a gatling gun.

Hokuto-kun thought that his turn wouldn't come, but he felt relieved because there were still a lot of monsters left.

And then, the Master finally gave the order. Hokuto unleashed the power that had been accumulated.

For Hokuto-kun, the walls of Goblins and Orcs were as good as a paper. Blowing away such paper easily, he wielded his paw, while aiming for the Cyclops from the back.

However, his claws didn't work well because the opponents were bigger than him, so Hokuto bit the neck of the monster and crushed its bones. Although he didn't want to use his fangs so much, he had to do it since he was in a hurry.

As he preferentially aimed for large-sized enemies, the Master was about to jump into the horde of monsters that was on their way.

Hokuto-kun thought that there wouldn't be any problems if it was the Master, but he wanted to let the Master ride on top of him, so when he landed on a group of monsters, he blew away the obstructive monsters and put the master on his back.

Hokuto-kun was pleased because he felt the weight of his Master on his back, and he ran around the battlefield in a good mood.

After that... Hokuto, who knocked down all of the monsters, loudly howled and was pleased with his victory.

But, he missed finishing the last one. Even though he was in a position that could save himself, the Master helped him out.

Hokuto-kun was so sad, but the Master praised him a lot, saying he did well.

Hokuto-kun was pleased when he was diligently stroked. He tried to spoil his face by rubbing against his Master's chest, but he had to give up. His mouth was full of blood because he used fangs this time, but... the Master didn't care about that at all and embraced him.

Because he was such a Master, Hokuto-kun wanted to follow him anywhere.

Although Hokuto-kun made a mistake at the end, he really enjoyed the patting while savoring the pleasure of being with his Master.

---

#### Notes

1. A type of steel made in the Japanese tradition. The word tama means “round and precious”, like a gem. The word hagane means “steel”. Tamahagane is used to make Japanese swords, knives, and other kinds of tools.
2. The art of sword drawing
3. Drawn Sword-Wind Blade (Don't ask me, that's a direct translation, so I think it's best to leave it in Japanese)

# Chapter 75 – More than Anything

---

— Emilia —

[Batto-kazaha!] (Emilia)

Sirius-sama once showed it to me, and then, I swung a wind blade that imitated a Katana at the Dyna Rhodia.

Since it was a wind blade, there was no sense of resistance in my hand.

But, I felt something being slashed by my right hand, and it wasn't my imagination. Rather than a monster, it felt like... I was slashing something dark.

I was even shedding tears inside without knowing it... it might be related to this.

Since my mana was almost exhausted when I unleashed this magic, my body collapsed with dizziness, but I gritted my teeth in order not to fall down.

Since the monster was still alive, I couldn't let myself collapse until I saw the outcome.

“...It's not working?” (Reese)

Reese's muttering, which was heard from the rear, was probably justified. Although my spell was unleashed, there were no changes on the monster.

But, this spell was...

“No... it worked.” (Emilia)

At that moment, when I thought whether there was a cut that entered in the monster's belly, a large amount of blood gushed out and dyed the surroundings red. I had a bit of the blood on me because I was nearby, and Sirius-sama's coat was stained.

With a dizzy head, I was thinking that I must properly wash the coat later, but then... I noticed the figure of the monster.

“No good... it was too shallow.” (Emilia)

It seemed that the spell had a shorter range beyond my expectations. It couldn't be helped because the spell imitated a Katana, but I should have at least taken a few more steps forwards.

Perhaps then, the spell could have cut half of its body. Thinking normally, this was a fatal wound with this amount of bleeding, but I heard that the monster's regenerative ability was amazing. It seemed the wound would soon heal if we left it alone.

Even if I wanted to release the spell once more, I could hardly stand, since my mana had hit rock bottom.

I couldn't do anything anymore, but our assault wasn't over yet.

"Take this-!" (Reus)

There was still Reus, who was suppressing the monster.

Reus pulled his sword, which had pinned the monster to the ground, out. He then ran up on the back of the monster and swung his sword with all of his power.

The spot that Reus swung was the other side that I'd slashed with the spell. Reus' greatsword didn't reach deep into the body of the monster because of its large body, but if we siblings hit from the front and the back, it would split into two.

"I did it!... Eh!?" (Reus)

"It is... tenacious, huh?" (Garve)

It didn't seem to be enough... even though there were a few more cuts. The entire body of the monster had become deep-red, but it seemed impossible to split the body with just a few slashes.

"Not yet! All of my power and mana... take it!" (Garve)

"Jii-chan!" (Reus)

At that moment, Ojii-chan, who had been focusing his mana nearby, jumped out and unleashed his [Wolf Fang] against its jaw.

Could this be a gut feeling? When I noticed this, Reus stabbed his sword into

the tail again, and the lower part of the monster was fixed to the ground. And then, Ojii-chan uppercutted the upper half of the monster toward the ceiling of the cave.

The two powers barely concentrated on the abdomen connecting the upper body and lower body. At last, the body of the monster was split in two.

The lower part of the monster stopped moving, while the upper body dropped to the ground a moment later and made a loud noise. Ojii-chan had landed safely, but maybe because he went all out like he said earlier, he fell to his knees and collapsed.

“Is it still alive?” (Garve)

Although the monster only had its upper body, it gradually approached Ojii-chan by crawling with its arms strength alone. However, Reus stood up in front of the monster to protect Ojii-chan.

“That’s bad, Jii-chan. Can you leave it to me?” (Reus)

“Aah. I was... That’s enough.” (Garve)

“Got it. I’ll end this. To kill a monster in this condition is like bullying a weak monster and I hate it, but I don’t think about that when it’s about you. For Tou-chan and Kaa-chan, and to enemy who even ate my friends... I will defeat it!” (Reus) Swiftly raising his sword, Reus went running and unleashed [Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style – Strong Heaven].

“This is the end-!” (Reus)

The sword that Reus swung down with all of his power wasn’t only slashing the monster’s body, but also the blade part of the sword was half buried into the ground. The blade cut no less than half of its head, and this time, the monster had stopped moving and its life ended.

Finally... we managed to defeat it.

The moment I acknowledged this, I reached my limits and slowly started to fall down.

That’s not good... my body would hit the ground if I stayed like this. But I was too exhausted to the extent that I couldn’t even extend my arms to support my

body.

I saw Reese trying to extend her hands, from sideways glance, but I didn't think that she would make it in time. When I thought like a child that I didn't want to get hurt, there was someone who caught the fallen me in his arms.

"...You did well." (Sirius)

"Sirius...-sama?" (Emilia)

The one who caught me was my Master, Sirius-sama.

There was no hint of the cold eyes he displayed when he left before, he was gently smiling at me now.

Moreover, he slowly stroked my head, and I was able to keep my consciousness with so much pleasantness.

"Were... you watching us?" (Emilia)

"Of course. You displayed your fighting figure well. Facing that demon, you defeated it and completely overcame your past. Be proud of that." (Sirius)

"Really...? Then, I am Sirius-sama's..." (Emilia)

"Yeah, you are my disciple. My proud disciple." (Sirius)

"Hehe... yeay..." (Emilia)

Aah... I felt that everything was rewarded with that smile and his words.

Embraced by my beloved Sirius-sama, I lost consciousness with happy feelings.

—

I was breathing and running in the world of darkness where everything was dyed black.

Wait...

Wait...

It was difficult to breath and I felt like I would collapse at anytime, but I looked forward and continued running.

Because Okaa-san and Otou-san were standing over there.



I wanted to see you.

I wanted to hear you.

I wanted to bite your shoulder again.

And yet... no matter how much I ran, I couldn't get close to Okaa-san and Otou-san.

Quickly...

Quickly...

I have to go to Okaa-san and Otou-san... quickly...

"Okaa-san, Otou-san, run awayyyyy!" (Emilia)

A big black monster appeared behind Okaa-san and Otou-san.

And that big mouth opened wide and was about to eat my precious family.

"I won't let you! [Air Shot]!" (Emilia)

The magic that I used as easy as breathing nowadays... didn't activate.

"Why!? [Air Shot]! [Air Slash]! [Air Impact]!" (Emilia)

No matter how much I concentrated... no matter how much I shouted, the spells didn't activate.

I understood the reason as soon as I saw my hands.

"Why...?" (Emilia)

My body reverted to a child's... back when the settlement was attacked.

I could cast the spells after I met Sirius-sama.

I couldn't do anything back then, I was just a child...

—

No!

It's not like that.

I... I... am not a child anymore!

Being trained by Sirius-sama, I learned how to use magic and I became

stronger... I am Emilia Silverion!

“Disappear!” (Emilia)

My body, which was a child’s body, reverted back to my original body when I noticed it. I immediately leaped up high under the force of the wind and I slashed the black monster with a blade of wind that I swung with my right hand.

And then, the blade of wind didn’t only cut the monster, but also the darkness.

“I am not scared of you anymore! Because I... have gotten over it!” (Emilia)  
The black monster had completely disappeared when I boldly declared those words, and the world of darkness turned into a white world.

I was surprised by the sudden change, but more importantly...

“Okaa-san, Otou-san... are you alright?” (Emilia)

I turned around to make sure of the well-being of my parents.

The moment I saw the face of Okaa-san and Otou-san, who didn’t change since the last time we parted... I had tears in my eyes.

Was I happy... or was I sad... I wasn’t sure anymore.

Because, this was... a dream.

Since the real Okaa-san and Otou-san... were no more.

“Hehe... Emilia is a crybaby. I don’t remember raising her like that, you know?” (Rona) “I guess so. Since you were such a tomboy, rather than crying, wouldn’t you immediately get angry and start retorting?” (Felios) “But... but...” (Emilia)

“Hey, let me stroke your head like usual. Emilia likes to be stroked here, right?” (Rona) “Oi, oi, you sneaky. I’m going to do that too.” (Felios)

Neither Okaa-san’s gentle stroke, nor Otou-san’s slightly rough stroke didn’t change. It was commonplace before, but nowadays, it was something that I had missed dearly. I was happy.

Now... I had someone who was gently stroking me now.

“Eh? For some reason, isn’t her reaction a bit different?” (Rona)

“Yeah. Because there is a person who strokes more comfortably now...” (Emilia) “Could it be that you are all over that person? To satisfy you more than me... it seems like that person is not an ordinary person.” (Rona) “‘All over’!? Is that person... a man?” (Felios)

“Yeah. He is a very kind and wonderful person. Reus and I are attendants for such a person. His name is Sirius-sama. He saved us when we were attacked by monsters...” (Emilia) And then, I was too absorbed and kept talking to Okaa-san and Otou-san.

Even if it was just a bit, I naturally kept talking very fast when it was about Sirius-sama and everyone. Okaa-san and Otou-san were smiling... no, Otou-san continued listening with a slightly bitter face.

Although their appearances were gradually becoming thin, as if they were melting in this white world... they were still smiling.

“Sirius-sama is very strong, and he is very knowledgeable. He always cares about us, the dishes he makes are very delicious, and he is a teacher who raised me to become this splendid.” (Emilia) Okaa-san’s appearance became thinner...

“Reus is also growing up wonderfully. Nowadays, he wields a greatsword, and he can easily defeat monsters. There were many times when he was a bit reckless and had strange behaviors, but he became really strong.” (Emilia) Otou-san’s appearance became thinner...

“And then, I went to a school. I met a girl, Reese, and we became friends. She is very kind, her water spells are amazing... she is my precious friend and family...” (Emilia) It was already hard to see due to the tears welling up... and I didn’t even know why I was talking to myself.

I just went on with my feelings, and I kept talking with Okaa-san and Otou-san.

When I let my feelings out and wiped away the tears, the appearances of Okaa-san and Otou-san had almost disappeared.

Although I still had something I would like to talk about... it seemed that there was no more time left.

But, before that, there were something I had to tell Okaa-san and Otou-san by

all means.

“Oh, are you done already? I wanted to hear more stories.” (Rona)

“Well... I have something to apologize for to Okaa-san and Otou-san.” (Emilia)  
“...Please say it.” (Rona)

“I love Sirius-sama. I am glad that I met that person and become his attendant.” (Emilia) To become Sirius-sama’s attendant and stay by his side was the best happiness for me. Okaa-san happily nodded at my confession while Otou-san reluctantly nodded.

“Yes, we understand that very well. The face you had when you talked about that person... looked so happy.” (Rona) “...He doesn’t seem to be seen as only your benefactor. It is frustrating, but I have no choice other than to accept it...” (Felios) “I am happy to be with Sirius-sama... and on that day... I was happy.” (Emilia) The ordinary days we spent were suddenly remembered. They naturally floated, and the me at that time was filled with a deep amount of self-loathing.

“Our settlement... because Okaa-san and Otou-san were attacked by the monsters... I could meet Sirius-sama...” (Emilia) I was able to achieve happiness because the people that I regarded most were attacked... it was a thought of blaspheming the dead.

“I love Okaa-san and Otou-san! I also love my friends at the settlement! But the thing about me meeting Sirius-sama is... is...” (Emilia) “...Emilia.” (Rona)

When I cried, Okaa-san hugged me. Otou-san also embraced Okaa-san and I.

“That Sirius-sama is more important than any other person you have met... right?” (Felios) “I’m sorry... I’m sorry...” (Emilia)

Okaa-san muttered while gently stroking me, who kept apologizing in her bosom.

“Emilia... you don’t have to apologize.” (Rona)

“We died because my strength wasn’t good enough. Instead of that, we’re the ones who should apologize for dying and leaving you and Reus.” (Felios) “There is no such thing! There is no reason for Okaa-san and Otou-san to apologize!” (Emilia) That was certainly the truth. Because Okaa-san and Otou-

san risked their lives... Reus and I survived.

When I raised my head, Okaa-san and Otou-san were stroking my head while smiling.

“You don’t have to feel bad. After all... we have already died. You don’t have to worry about us anymore, and it definitely won’t be good if you are not enjoying yourself now.” (Rona) “You met a person who is more important than me and Okaa-san. You became stronger and defeated our enemies. As your parents, we are certainly happy.” (Felios) “Otou-san is right. You have grown up and that makes us happier than anything else. There are no parents who are not pleased with the growth of their children.” (Rona) I couldn’t... stop crying.

Why... why... why did the people that I love have to disappear like this?

“It is good enough for us if Emilia and Reus are happy.” (Rona)

“It looks like Reus has grown up wonderfully and became a warrior. I am relieved.” (Felios) “Otou-san... it’s too early to feel relieved. I don’t feel calm if it is that child. Sirius-sama and I would worry if we don’t watch over him.” (Emilia) “Although I said that I would depend on you when it came to Reus, don’t overdo it and neglect yourself.” (Felios) “It’s alright. If Sirius-sama is there, I will not be afraid of anything. So, you don’t need to worry.” (Emilia) “You really like that person, huh? If that’s the case, you need to go soon. This is not a place for you, right?” (Felios) After saying that and chewing my shoulder, Okaa-san and Otou-san left. I also tried to bite their shoulders, but my out-stretched hand couldn’t touch anything. It just went through Okaa-san’s body.

“Even if you don’t bite, we understand your feelings. Please be safe.” (Rona) “It is frustrating, but please direct those feelings to the person called Sirius.” (Felios) “...Yeah.” (Emilia)

“From now on, live the way you want and be happy. That is our only wish.” (Rona) “Whatever happens, you have my blessings.” (Felios)

“Okaa-san... Otou-san...” (Emilia)

Okaa-san’s and Otou-san’s bodies continued to disappear in the white world until there was nothing that could be seen other than their silhouettes.

Even so... I still had something that I wanted to tell them.

I wiped away the tears and shouted.

“I am really glad that I am the daughter of Okaa-san and Otou-san!” (Emilia) [I love you, Emilia.] (Rona)

[I love you, Emilia.] (Felios)

“I love you too!” (Emilia)

And then... Okaa-san and Otou-san had completely disappeared.

How long have I been crying and sitting down in this white world since Okaa-san and Otou-san disappeared?

I finally felt refreshed after crying for quite some time, and then, I slowly turned around.

Although the white world was still spreading on the other side, the only difference was that I could see a sun that was radiating a warm light in the sky. My heart was calm whenever I looked at that sun, and my tail was naturally swinging.

This body felt the warmth... and there was no mistake. That sun is where I should head to. It was a place where my Master, who I swore to live with, should be.

I started walking towards the sun.

To return to where I belonged...

—

“...Have you woken up?” (Sirius)

While I was having a blurry consciousness, I turned towards the voice and I could see my Master, Sirius-sama, looking at me.

I unconsciously reached out for him, and Sirius-sama grabbed my hand.

It was warm... after all, this person was my ‘sun’.

“How’s the condition of your body?” (Sirius)

“Yes... although it’s a bit sluggish, I am fine, Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

Since I didn’t receive any attacks, this was simply a physical disorder due to

mana exhaustion.

I raised up my upper body while removing the blanket wrapped around my body, and then I checked the surroundings.

The place was not the cave where we fought the monster. It seemed to be a house that somebody used to live in. The room was strangely dusty, but, somehow... it felt familiar.

“Sirius-sama... this is...?” (Emilia)

“This is one of the houses of the settlement where you lived. I’ve brought you here, since you fainted.” (Sirius) Come to think of it, there were still houses in the settlement that hadn’t been destroyed. Since the interior decorations were unique to the silver wolf tribe, I felt some familiarity with it.

The room was bright due to Sirius-sama’s spell, but it was already dark when I looked at the outside from the window.

“How long have I been asleep? And... the others are...?” (Emilia)

“It has been several hours. Both Reus and Reese are staying in other houses.” (Sirius) After that, Sirius-sama explained what happened after I fainted.

When I fainted, Ojii-chan fainted next.

If I thought about it, Ojii-chan was fighting continuously, even after we arrived at the settlement. It was probably expected, since he had unleashed his deadly technique many times today.

“His physical strength and mana were considerably exhausted, and his stressed mind had relaxed when the enemy was defeated. Reus is watching over him. I think he will safely wake up tomorrow, so please rest with ease.” (Sirius) “That’s good. Since Ojii-chan... was working really hard.” (Emilia)

“Well, you were like that, too. Look, I’ve made some soup, so you should eat it. Aren’t you hungry?” (Sirius) My stomach grumbled when I heard about the soup. Sirius-sama brought a bowl of soup while smiling. By doing so, the loneliness that I felt when our hands were separated had somehow mended.

Whether it was warmed up in advance, the steam rose from the soup and a delicious smell filled the room. This smell... it was the soup that he treated me

and Reus with for the first time.

“And I made a Tamagoyaki, since Reus found fresh eggs. He is, of course, a sweet guy.” (Sirius) “Uhhh, if you don’t mind, can you please...” (Emilia)

“Hmmm? Do you want me to feed you?” (Sirius)

“...Yes.” (Emilia)

Sirius-sama smiled as if to say that he had no other choice. And then, he made me eat the soup and the Tamagoyaki. It was very tasty with a light flavor, I was really happy that he adjusted the seasoning according to my preferences. Moreover, he fed me... I was so happy.

While letting me eat like that, Sirius-sama started to tell me what happened next.

“We dug a hole for the monster and buried it. The existence that threatened you has completely disappeared.” (Sirius) There were also things about us. It seemed that the raw materials of the monster weren’t removed and it was completely incinerated and buried into the ground. I was happy with that thought.

Besides that, although I didn’t see it, there was a large amount of monsters that were knocked down by Sirius-sama outside of the cave. They also dug a hole and disposed of them, so there was no need to worry about the monsters gathering together more than necessary. Reus and Hokuto seemed to play a huge part in these matters.

And since Hokuto left territorial marks to the surroundings and he was watching over the settlement, there was almost no possibility for the monsters to come closer.

“That’s why, you don’t have to worry. Since I’m also going to sleep nearby, I will say something if there is anything.” (Sirius) As Sirius-sama said that, he tried to get up after feeding me, but I reflexively grabbed his sleeve to stop him.

Aah... that’s not good. Maybe because I saw a dream of Okaa-san and Otou-san, I unconsciously thought that I wanted him to be by my side.

“Reese was right. Got it. I will stay nearby, so don’t make that face. Is this



alright?” (Sirius) Sirius-sama sat in front of me again and stroked my head.

Originally, this place was supposed to be for girls, where Reese and I would stay; but, apparently, Reese clearly told Sirius-sama what he should do. It looked like Sirius-sama had predicted that I would grab his sleeve when he was about to leave. He was smiling because he was right. It was a bit embarrassing, but, thank you... Reese.

“Even though you just woke up, you better go to sleep. Look, I am here, so you can take a rest.” (Sirius) “Understood. But before that, there is something I want to talk to Sirius-sama. Will you hear me?” (Emilia) “Yes, I will.” (Sirius)

“Thank you very much. Actually, after I lost consciousness...” (Emilia)

I told him about the nightmare that I continued having, and the talk with Okaa-san and Otou-san after I got over it. Sirius-sama nodded many times as if he was the one who felt pleased or saddened while he stroked my head over and over again.

I heard from Sirius-sama that so-called ‘dream’ appeared because of one’s wish and had been unconsciously let out, but I didn’t think it was a dream. No... it didn’t matter even if it was a dream. If it was my Okaa-san and Otou-san, they would certainly say so.

And then...

“Okaa-san said that I should live the way I want to live... So, I think that... I have something that I want to tell you.” (Emilia) Grasping Sirius-sama’s hands, I took a deep breath while looking at his eyes.

“I... I love Sirius-sama. As an attendant... as a disciple... and as a woman, I love you.” (Emilia) “Is that so? I’m happy.” (Sirius)

“I think that you already know this, but I expressed my feelings with words once again. But since I am your attendant, you don’t need to worry. It is good enough for you to know that a woman is in love with you. I would be happy if you could stroke my head like now, sometimes, later on...” (Emilia) I couldn’t say that I was happy.

Because... my mouth was blocked by Sirius-sama’s mouth.

“...Are you satisfied with just stroking?” (Sirius)

Sirius-sama slowly separated himself from me. He was smiling while caressing my cheek.

“Uhhh... just now... was that...?” (Emilia)

“Calm down. Emilia loves me, and I also love Emilia. Isn’t it simple?” (Sirius)  
“But... it’s just that... you didn’t respond no matter how many times I tempted you... I was worried... that it was because I had no sex appeal...” (Emilia) I was told the way of an attendant by Erina-san, including the care of the night. And I was taught that the female attendant whom the Master had chosen to be embraced was evidence that she was the one he trusted the most. And I would respond to Sirius-sama’s desire... with my own body. I thought that was a great thing.

I would like to be chosen by all means because I love Sirius-sama, and that was why I had been making an effort to become an attractive woman. It was difficult, but I never thought that it was painful when I thought that I would be chosen by Sirius-sama.

I kept honing myself in order to become worthy as Sirius-sama’s attendant... as a beautiful woman... with a big and attractive chest.

But... when Sirius-sama was of age, which was mentioned by Erina-san, he didn’t ask for it at all.

I would sneak into his futon, enter the bathroom... I actively tried many things when I hugged him, but he kept avoiding me without much difficulty.

That was why I started to doubt whether he really liked me, and when I thought about staying by his side... just like this... he kissed me!

I was happy and my consciousness was about to, unintentionally, disappear.

“I never said that you are unattractive. It was a bit stressful when such a beautiful girl liked me. Would it be impossible not to fall in love?” (Sirius) “If that’s so, why did you not respond? Even if you looked at me as a tool, I had no plans to refuse you.” (Emilia) “This is a one-sided thought, but you can’t run away from me, Emilia.” (Sirius) If he accepted my feelings before overcoming the past, I would completely rely on Sirius-sama, and there was a possibility of

me running away without facing the monster.

Now that he said that, I had to agree. Perhaps, when I got all over Sirius-sama, I might not have been able to step forward when I faced the monster, and I would hide behind his back.

I understood the reason when I thought about it, but it was really cruel. He was... really strict.

"I-I have a question, since when... did you become conscious of me?" (Emilia)  
"Hmmm... I was a bit conscious about you as a woman when we entered the school in Elysion. Because you grew up so attractively, I had a hard time enduring it recently." (Sirius) Aah... I was glad.

My efforts had been paid off and it was conveyed to Sirius-sama. I was pleased and I was almost crying.

When I was trembling with joy, Sirius-sama looked into my eyes with a serious expression. We were looking at each other to see if there was a lie.

"But Emilia, will you be fine? I... killed a lot of people, you know?" (Sirius) "... Yes, I know." (Emilia)

Sirius-sama would go somewhere by himself at night, and I would smell a slight smell of blood whenever he came back.

But...

"It was necessary for Sirius-sama to stick to your own beliefs, right? And the most important thing is, Sirius-sama is not a person who would thoughtlessly take our lives. As I am including that, I still admire you." (Emilia) "I also like Reese. Besides that, I had been pressed by a female elf who I met in the past... but still, are you...?" (Sirius) "I expect this if it is Reese. I am not sure about the female elf, but it is normal for a woman to be attracted to a strong person. No matter how much it increases, I wouldn't mind if Sirius-sama loves us equally." (Emilia) "I don't mean that I want to increase the number in particular, but... I'm not that convincing huh? Putting aside the numbers, are you alright with that?" (Sirius) "Yes. It is good enough for me if I can respond to Sirius-sama's wishes as an attendant." (Emilia) "No... I don't like that kind of thing. I won't feel comfortable if I don't properly treat you as the woman for me." (Sirius) And he

was... kissing me again.

The endearing feelings towards Sirius-sama was overflowing, I hoped time like this would last forever.

The moment our mouths tried to separate, I instinctively went for Sirius-sama, but he stopped me by holding my shoulders. Sorry, but my feelings were overflowing and it seemed like my body was arbitrarily asking for it.

Since Sirius-sama still had something to say, I desperately suppressed my feelings and waited for his words.

“Emilia. I will accept your feelings. Please become my lover.” (Sirius) “Yes. I won’t be with anyone other than Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“Is that so? Please take care of me from now on.” (Sirius)

“Yes! I’ll be by your side until this life comes to an end.” (Emilia)

I jumped into Sirius-sama’s bosom and had we kissed for the third time.

I was an attendant for this person.

However, I would love this person... as a woman.

“I love you... Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

Okaa-san. Otou-san.

You know... I am very happy.

But, I will be happier from now on, so please watch over us.

[Yes, we have been watching you.] (Rona)

[Yeah, we will watch over you.] (Felios)

—

An incident that Emilia didn’t even tell Sirius.

When I separated from Okaa-san and Otou-san, while I was on my way back to Sirius-sama... I was attracted to something.

There was a table and chairs from the mansion where we lived in before.

Sirius-sama usually drank some tea that Erina-san made on that table, but at

this time, she was sitting there and was drinking some tea.

And on the opposite side... there was a woman, who I had met somewhere, sitting there.

That person was certainly a woman in a picture that Erina-san showed us, right?

By the way, that person was Sirius-sama's...

When I thought about it, those two stood up and told me while smiling.

[Take care of Sirius-sama.] (Erina)

[Take care of my son!] (Aria)

"...Yes!" (Emilia)

...And then, I woke up.

*Whether the scene that Emilia saw was a dream... or whether it happened in reality is left to the imagination of the reader.*(Author)

# Chapter 76 – The Reformation of the Silver Wolf Tribe

---

I woke up to an unusual sound and soft feeling on my arm.

It seemed that it was already morning, after I confirmed the surroundings. When I slowly turned to my side, there was Emilia, who was sleeping with an innocent face while hugging my arm.

Emilia hadn't woken up yet, but whether she was unconscious or not, she was happily wagging her tail. The identity of that unusual sound was the sound of her wagging tail hitting the blanket.

Looking at the height of the sun from the window, it looked like I woke up later than usual. I would have gotten up earlier, if it was the usual circumstances; but, apparently, I was still tired from fighting yesterday. It was natural to get tired from continuous mana exhaustion and repeated recovery.

And since Emilia was also got over her past and fought the monster, it seemed that she was sleeping deeper than me.

Although she was sleeping, she was rubbing her cheek on my arm several times, while sleep talking.

"Sirius...-sama..." (Emilia)

Even so... Emilia seemed really happy.

When I used the other hand to stroke Emilia's head, she was happily snuggling me and started sniffing.

"Hehehe..." (Emilia)

"...Are you awake?" (Sirius)

"...You got me." (Emilia)

Emilia opened her eyes when I pointed her out, but she didn't leave my arm. She was smiling while looking at my face, and she started to hug my arm

tighter.

“My dream has come true. I am glad... I am very happy.” (Emilia)

She finally left my arm, brought her body closer and started chewing my shoulder. She did it many times yesterday... I had been chewed many times and the sensation was getting dull, but Emilia didn't seem to have had enough.

“I am really happy with your feelings, but I want you to stop, because the blood may come out soon.” (Sirius)

“I'm sorry. But I'm just happy and I can't stop. I will lick you if blood comes out, so just a bit more...” (Emilia)

Emilia started biting my shoulder again after saying that. I thought she was done, but... in such a situation, I thought of something that was different from biting one's shoulder.

“Emilia, look here.” (Sirius)

“Aah...” (Emilia)

I put my hands on Emilia's cheeks and turned her around, and then I kissed her.

Emilia was smiling as if she was melting when I separate from her face... and she started biting my shoulder again.

“In the end, it's a biting, huh...?” (Sirius)

“I love it...” (Emilia)

At last... blood came out.

—

Later, I had, somehow, managed to persuade Emilia, who didn't want to be separated from me. When we went outside, Reus and Garve were already awake and they were discussing something in the settlement's square. Since Reus was swinging his fists, it looked like he was being taught something.

By the way, Reus was fine and he didn't get injured from yesterday's battle, but Garve, who continuously unleashed his killer technique, had the bones of his left hand slightly fractured. Fortunately, it didn't reach to a point where he

needed treatment from my regenerative ability or Reese's. He would heal up after he wrapped the hand with a bandage and took some rest.

"Aah, good morning, Aniki, Nee-chan." (Reus)

"Ooh. Is it you guys? Good..." (Garve)

"Good morning." (Sirius)

"Uhehe... Good morning, Reus, Ojii-chan." (Emilia)

While we were greeting in the morning, Garve was the only one who was at a loss for words. Well... it was understandable, when looking at his granddaughter.

Emilia was blushing and she was hiding behind me because she seemed to be happy while wagging her tail.

"No... no way, did you...?" (Garve)

"Ooh! Nee-chan is really in a good mood." (Reus)

"Of course. That's because Sirius-sama... hehehe." (Emilia)

The Silver Wolf tribe was sensitive to odor, and it could be clearly understood, when looking at Emilia's condition.

Garve was at a loss for words when he thought what had happened, but Reus was as usual. Well, in Reus' case, I didn't think that he understood what happened.

Since Hokuto, who had kept watch yesterday, got closer, I stroked his head. In the meantime, Emilia and Garve were looking at each other with serious faces.

"I have no reason to say this, but... is that alright?" (Garve)

"Yes. I am with Sirius-sama. That is the best happiness." (Emilia)

"Is that so? Me too, if that is the man... I have no complaints. Same goes to Felios and Rona, I also want you to live the way you want." (Garve)

"Yes!" (Emilia)

When I noticed, it seemed that I had gained Garve's trust to the point that he believed in his grandchildren. But, I also had to say this least once.



I stopped stroking Hokuto, stood in front of Garve and bowed.

“Although it’s late, I am going to take care your grandchild. I will surely make her happy.” (Sirius)

“Aah... I leave it to you. But, if you make her cry, I might hit you. Engrave that in your heart.” (Garve)

“I leave it to you at that time.” (Sirius)

“It’s alright, Ojii-chan. If Sirius-sama ever makes me cry, it will only be happy tears... ehehe.” (Emilia)

“Hmm... Congratulations.” (Garve)

Emilia was more pleased with my declaration. She hugged my arm with an ecstatic expression, while wagging her tail. Garve had a bitter smile, but blessed us obediently, and Reus was also happy, since he was clapping.

“Hehe, that’s great Nee-chan. Aniki is really close to become my real Aniki.” (Reus)

“You’re too fast, Reus. I will be Sirius-sama’s attendant until the end. But, when it comes to children, how many...?” (Emilia)

“Haa... you guys are going way too fast. By the way, is Reese still sleeping?” (Sirius)

“Reese-ane is making breakfast in that house. Look.” (Reus)

“Breakfast is ready!” (Reese)

When I turned around, Reese came out from another house, the one I was sleeping in before, and she was calling us. So, we decided to go to that house and had some breakfast.

—

“Anyhow, I will decide the plan from now on.” (Sirius)

While eating breakfast prepared by Reese, I decided to discuss the upcoming plans.

There was nothing much to say, I think. The enemy of the Silver Wolf tribe, which was the biggest problem, had been defeated, and the surrounding

monsters were already cleaned out by Hokuto.

Later, should we build the graves for those who lived in this settlement?

“I was saying that we wanted to build graves, but how many people lived in this settlement?” (Sirius)

“There was not even one hundred people here. However, since most of the bones and remaining items are gone, I am planning to build one big grave at the back of the settlement.” (Garve)

“After that, I will inscribe the names that I can recall. Aniki, once the stone is prepared, I want to borrow that knife.” (Reus)

My mithril knife would certainly make it easy to carve the names on a rock, but this wasn't a grave anymore. It was a memorial monument. Well, I left it to them to call it whatever they liked, but were the siblings alright with building such a big grave?

“I want to ask at least once, don't you want to revive this settlement and live here again?” (Sirius)

“I can't exactly say no, but I think the reconstruction would be difficult, after all. We are the only survivors, but we can't stay here.” (Emilia)

“Yeah, our place is by Aniki's side. Besides, the enemy has been defeated, and it is enough to build a grave for Tou-chan and Kaa-chan.” (Reus)

“I guess so. There is no way we can afford to send our people out of the settlement. I think it is good enough if I make a grave for my son and friends and mourn them.” (Garve)

No matter how much power he had, it looked like he understood that it was different from reconstructing the settlement.

If that's the case, you have to work hard from now on. Since the parents of the siblings were included in the mourning of nearly one hundred people, we ought to make a good one that suits them.

As we easily decided the plan, Reese, who was looking at us, opened her mouth.

“By the way... how long does Emilia want to do that?” (Reese)

“Eh?” (Emilia)

Emilia kept feeding me the meal during the conversation and was very good at it. Since Emilia would be depressed if I openly refused her, I completely gave up and let her do what she wanted.

If it was about giving me meals with her hands or chopsticks, she had done it many times, but this time, she ended it with drinks. She made me drink in perfect unison with my breathing, it was almost like drinking with my own hands. In other words... I hadn't touched the meal nor drinks since breakfast had started. It was the moment when the capability of Emilia, as an attendant, woke up to its limits.

Reese was a bit surprised at Emilia, who looked happy every time I ate a bit, but I had a feeling that she was jealous.

“Sorry, Reese. Now, I can't help myself from taking care of Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“Quit it already. But, I guess it can't be help for today. Because Emilia's dream has finally come true.” (Reese)

“Thank you very much, Reese. So, Reese too... here you go, I will give you a drink.” (Emilia)

“I-I don't really... eh!? That's amazing!” (Reese)

This was the first time Emilia met Reese since breakfast, and Reese blessed her and hit her shoulder while smiling. I couldn't feel anything like a bad mood from the condition of these two. The female team seemed to be on good terms, after all.

The moment I extended my hand for the meal, since Emilia was focusing on Reese...

“Sirius-sama, please open your mouth.” (Emilia)

“...Thank you.” (Sirius)

Although Emilia was certainly facing Reese, she noticed me and, since she presented the dish to my mouth, I ate it.

Reese was just like me when I looked at her, she was a bit embarrassed when

being fed by Emilia's hand.

"It is not bad, but... even Senia didn't do it like this." (Reese)

"There is no gap in Erina-san's education in terms of taking care of others!" (Emilia)

"You're the best, Nee-chan!" (Reus)

"Jealous, huh... no, what did you say about me!?" (Emilia)

Such a chaotic breakfast continued...

—

After breakfast, we started our work to build the graves... no, the memorial monument.

First, we cleaned up a part of the settlement. Next, a rock was finely cut by Reus' sword, and shaped it into a big stone. Afterwards, they carved the name of each person who lived in the settlement with my knife.

Although Emilia and Reus took turns carving the names, it would take time for nearly one hundred of them, so we decided to take a break and prepared for lunch.

We were working separately, the male team went to procure the ingredients, while the female team was responsible for cooking.

We were divided into two teams, since Emilia and Reese were in a situation that they wanted to talk with only them, but it would be unlikely that there would be a fight from the air. Maybe, it was because of yesterday's report?

And then, we went to a nearby river to catch some river fish. By the way, Hokuto had a role of delivering them to Emilia and Reese once the fish had been gathered.

"... Alright, it's the fifth. It is good that the fish easily bite." (Reus)

"There is another way of catching fish." (Sirius)

I grabbed a thick branch and made [String] into a fishing line. An instant, a fishing rod was made and I went fishing. And Reus was training while catching the fish with his hands farther down the stream. By the way, the method used

by the Silver Wolf tribe was to thrust out, as if using a harpoon.

Since Garve was injured, he was resting, while faintly looking at my fishing.

“...It’s been a long time since I spent time leisurely.” (Garve)

“It’s because the enemy has been defeated. That is why it’s also necessary to relax.” (Sirius)

Ever since he heard that this settlement was attacked, it appeared that Garve had continued to spend his days restlessly. Occasionally, there were times when he couldn’t sleep because he dreamt of himself quarrelling with his son.

However, once Garve confirmed the devastation of the settlement with his own eyes, he, who had avenge him, had his restless heart calm down. It would be natural to feel relieved.

“I guess so. And what’s left behind is this...” (Garve)

Garve took out the mithril Tekkou, which he’d brought, and started to maintain it with a dry cloth. It wasn’t the left hand Tekkou that Garve’s equipped with, but the right-handed Tekkou.

This Tekkou was what Reus found in the cave, where that monster made its bed.

Since there were strong bones and metals laying around, maybe the monster regurgitated it. The fact that this Tekkou was there was evidence that Reus’ father was eaten by that monster.

Although the Tekkou that was handed over to his son returned to Garve... the harsh fact was that he seemed to feel lonely, while continuously maintaining it.

“What are you saying? You have more important things that remain, right?” (Sirius)

“I guess so. I still have my grandchildren...” (Garve)

When Garve looked to the side, the appearance of Reus entering the river and trying to catch a fish could be seen, and the eyes he was looking at the sight with were gentle.

But... Garve should have seen the figure of Reus as a Cursed Child. What does

he think about that?

“Well, now you must know about Reus being a cursed child, right? Would that be alright with the law?” (Sirius)

“The law... is it? I was convinced by a child named Reese at that time, but... to be honest, I am still hesitant.” (Garve)

At that time... Garve was stunned when he saw the transformed Reus, but Reese came from the side and gave him a slap.

[What are you doing!? Your grandchildren are fighting really hard!] (Reese)

[B-but...] (Garve)

[Is it because he is a Cursed Child!? Even if his appearance changed, Reus is still your grandchild! Although Reus is fighting, you, as his family member, what are you doing!?] (Reese)

“His appearance had certainly changed, but there is no mistake that he is my grandchild. But... I forgot about it at that time and fought, but as the head of the Silver Wolf tribe, I can't completely accept it myself. After all, I have taken the life of a Cursed Child in the past.” (Garve)

In the past, Garve killed an adult who became a Cursed Child. He was the head at that time and it seemed he was the strongest person, but... when he handled someone who was from the same tribe as him, he seemed to have tasted a feeling that was similar to tearing his body apart.

Even so, why did the Silver Wolf tribe have such a rule? Therefore, I asked Garve, since he might know the reason.

“...There is a story in our legend. A long time ago, there was a certain Silver Wolf tribesman who became a Cursed Child and turned rampant. That person didn't only massacre the Silver Wolf tribesmen, but also other races.” (Garve)

Massacre... it sounded exaggerated, but I was also convinced, in a sense.

When Reus transformed, his physical ability jumped out, but he became unusually aroused and aggressive. It was a guess of mine, after watching him for years, but it might be easier to observe the dormant instincts whenever he transformed.

If the legend was true, perhaps the man who enjoyed killing might have become a Cursed Child.

“I see. Garve believed it... no, since you believed it, you had to take care of it with your own hands.” (Sirius)

“At first, I didn’t believe it at all. But, the person who became a Cursed Child had forgotten about me and attacked his surroundings, and he was about to put his hands on a nearby child. I had to believe it against my will, and... I killed him as the head of the settlement.” (Garve)

He believed the legend by forcing himself. What a painful role.

“...Did Sirius raise Reus, knowing that he was a Cursed Child? Maybe... If the adult Reus transformed, what would you do when he becomes a man who kills people?” (Garve)

“I see... First of all, I will listen to his reason. I am not going to say not to kill people, but I am not going to say anything if I can consent to his reasoning. But, if Reus becomes a murderer just like Garve says...” (Sirius)

I had no qualification to say this, since I have also killed people. But, if Reus did it just for the pleasure...

“I will kill him. Since I have trained and raised Reus, that would be normal, right?” (Sirius)

“Is that so?” (Garve)

Garve lonely muttered when he heard those words. It looked like he gave up when he thought about something in the long term, but I still had something to say.

“However, that is a last resort. It would be fine if I don’t raise Reus to be like that. Look at him, does he look like a man who enjoys killing?” (Sirius)

When we turned our lines-of-sight, Reus had raised a big fish that he caught high in the air and showed it to us. The expression looked very funny, it was an innocent smile that hadn’t changed since he was a child.

“He can control himself even if he transforms. You saw that yesterday, right?” (Sirius)

“...Aah.” (Garve)

“I have decided to raise Reus to be a fine man. For example, if he goes rampant, I will accept the responsibility to stop him, even if I have to kill him.” (Sirius)

Of course, it would be pointless with feelings alone, the strength must match it.

I never skip training in order to not be defeated by Reus, and I would deal with him like a parent, so that I could gain his trust. I wasn't forcing myself because it was my nature and consciousness.

“Well... although I said a lot of things, the value and ideas are different between Garve and me. I had such feelings to the bitter end, but have you got the answer?” (Sirius)

“Aah, yes... it's good enough.” (Garve)

When Garve, who had a slightly refreshing expression, turned sideways, there was Reus, who caught a fish, running towards our direction.

“Aniki! Jii-chan! I got a big one!” (Reus)

The fish caught by Reus was big and he needed to hold it with both hands. Although he was proudly showing off the catch, Garve shook his head with loosened cheeks.

“That's still a small one. I've caught a bigger one, you know?” (Garve)

“Really!? Alright, I will catch a bigger fish than Jii-chan!” (Reus)

Garve's eyes, who saw Reus go back to the river again after putting the fish down, was like an old man who was gently watching his grandchild. With this, he was probably able to relieve the stress, I quietly had a smile because of that.

“By the way, haven't we got enough fish already? That big guy is enough for several people.” (Garve)

“It's too little. If it involves these children, they will eat them in the blink of an eye. So, I leave it to you, Hokuto.” (Sirius)

“Woof!” (Hokuto)



I put the fish that was caught by Reus in a basket, which Hokuto held, and I watched him gallantly walk away. Even if there would be more fish, there won't be any problems if we turned them into dried fish and preserved foods.

Whether Garve was convinced with my words, he resumed maintaining the Tekkou, and I also resumed fishing.

A quiet time was spent just like that, where the only sound was the river and the sound of polishing a Tekkou could be heard.

And when the fishing rod shook, I stopped after catching my tenth fish. I rubbed my shoulders to loosen the muscle stiffness.

Although there was no more pain, I felt that Emilia had bit a little too much and the sensation of my shoulder was dull. It might be temporary, but it couldn't be helped, since I had to massage my shoulder several times, and Garve was looking at me with a bitter smile.

"Heh... how was it? A female Silver Wolf is passionate, right?" (Garve)

"She was too passionate, until I bled. Well... I am happy with that honest behavior, though." (Sirius)

"My wife was also like that. That girl doesn't seem to lose to her." (Garve)

Apparently, Garve also had a similar situation in the past.

To a person who knew the same pain... we silently shook our heads, and then, Reus caught another fish and came towards us.

"How about this, Jii-chan!?" (Reus)

"Hahaha, it's still small." (Garve)

"Dang it!" (Reus)

The time of food procurement was spent with heartwarming banter.

—

Later... after we finished lunch, the three Silver Wolf-kin continued carving the names on the tombstone while I was cooking on an instant cooktop made by combining stones.

The fish that weren't used for lunch were treated and dried. Reese, who was

next to me, was stewing and helping with the fish broth. She didn't try to match eyes with me at all, ever since I came back from fishing.

Since her face colored red, as if she was embarrassed, without a doubt, it was caused by the talk between the two females... and, by judging from the situation, it wouldn't have done any good if I listened to them, so I left them be.

After the preparations were finished, next was to cook our dinner. And then, Reese started to shyly talk to me.

"Uhhh... Sirius-san. You and Emilia... have become lovers, right?" (Reese)

"That was my plan, but how about her?" (Sirius)

"It is as what I have expected. I heard from Emilia earlier, but she said that she was an attendant until the end. Although she would choose that position if she became a lover, it would be strange for her to stick to being an attendant." (Reese)

Emilia was happy to become my lover, but she said that she wanted to take care of me as an attendant, so she declared to the surroundings that she would be an attendant until the end.

Perhaps, it might be because of Erina's influence. Since Erina said to Emilia that she devoted herself as an attendant, she also properly told her about the joys of being an attendant.

"Me too... someday... as a lover..." (Reese)

It seemed that Reese muttered it unconsciously, she held her mouth as her face turned red, but I clearly heard her.

She didn't fall in love like Emilia, whom I rescued from despair, but she fell in love like a normal girl. So, her feelings of love were slowly developing as she became tempted by Emilia, but... she might have gotten impatient because of the current situation.

"There is no need to rush, Reese. But... since Reese has heard from Emilia, will you be fine with me?" (Sirius)

"A...If not, I would not have followed you so far." (Reese)

"Is that so? I'm happy. If it's about Reese, I..." (Sirius)

“Please, wait a minute.” (Reese)

I wanted to tell Reese my feelings again, but she interrupted me, while shaking her head.

“I’m happy, but please only look at Emilia today. Because it was a dream that she talked about many times since she met you...” (Reese)

As she said that, she was smiling like a saint who had blessed her best friend from the bottom of her heart. Although she, herself, said that she was a fake Saintess, it would not feel weird to call her a Saintess when she held that kind of tolerance.

When I thought about it, it would have been rude if I confessed my feeling like I did to Emilia. So, for today, let’s just hold these feelings in and consent to what Reese had said.

“Besides... it is still within my limit, but if more than that...” (Reese)

Reese was probably remembering about kissing my cheek in front of the cave, she was facing downwards with a reddened face. Although she was proactively calling it a blessing of a Saintess, it seemed that was the limit for the current Reese.

“Understood. Anyhow, please proceed through it slowly, according to Reese’s pace. Because, I’ll be waiting.” (Sirius)

“Eh!? Y-yes. Please... wait for me.” (Reese)

If it would take too much time, I had planned to ‘attack’ from here... but let’s stop for now.

As Reese grasped my hand, instead of my sleeve, she showed a smile with dyed cheeks, and I also smiled back.

—

Before the evening came, they finally finished carving the names on the tombstone.

The memorial monument was completed with the details of the disaster engraved on the front side, and nearly one hundred names engraved on the back side.

Nevertheless, I thought that they remembered the names of many people quite well. Was that because of a special characteristic of the Silver Wolf tribe, which was deep camaraderie?

“You should inscribe something at the end.” (Garve)

“Nee-chan... I leave it to you.” (Reus)

“Leave it to me.” (Emilia)

Finally... the last sentences were engraved by Emilia’s hand, and the memorial monument was finally completed.

After we arranged the prepared dishes as offerings, we silently prayed in front of the memorial monument and mourned the dead.

I was an outsider, but I had few words for the parents of Emilia and Reus, Felios-san and Rona-san.

It was my responsibility to make them happy.

When I vowed that in my mind and opened my eyes, the siblings and Garve stood up and bowed to me.

“Thank you. I can finally move on. Let alone meeting with my grandchildren, we could also make the grave, it’s all thanks to you... Sirius. Once again, thank you.” (Garve)

“Thank you very much, Sirius-sama.” (Emilia)

“Thanks, Aniki!” (Reus)

Looking at the smiles from the family of the Silver Wolf tribe, it was finally realized that everything was over.

And the last sentence engraved on the memorial monument was...

[To my family. I sincerely pray for your souls. XX-settlement<sup>[1]</sup>, the last survivors.]

—

And then, we stayed in the settlement for several days.

The reason was to let Garve completely recover from the injuries. Originally,

they wouldn't have healed, unless he rested for half a month, but because of my regenerative abilities, and since Garve originally had excellent self recovery abilities, two days seemed to have been enough to heal the fractures.

However, while I was training hand-to-hand combat with Reus the next day, there was a scene where Emilia made Garve sit in the seiza position and was giving him a lecture.

Incidentally, Emilia showed a calm composure the next day, but she didn't return to bother me. And I also didn't prepare the meals the following day. I was pleased with that excessive dedication, but since I would become no good, I persuaded her to stop doing this after half a day.

Speaking of other things that had changed, it seemed that she came into my bed, like before. Even if I said so, Emilia would cling to my arm and fall right to sleep.

We're leisurely spending the days, cleaning the settlement and making emergency rations.

After Garve had completely recovered, we prayed at the memorial monument again for the last time, and then left the settlement.

We followed the way from where we came to the settlement. We rested for a day at the place we parked our carriage... and then, the time to bid farewell to Garve arrived.

Actually, I tried inviting him on our trip, but he refused, since there were disciples and companions waiting for his return to the settlement. It seemed that he truly wanted to be with his grandchildren, but since it couldn't be helped, he secretly told me.

We got on the carriage and returned the main road. And then, we faced Garve.

At first, we tried to send Garve to the settlement, but he clearly wanted to say goodbye here.

He refused because we would make a detour if we sent him back. If we headed north from here, there would be a big town with an arena. That was also his real intention, since it would be painful to say goodbye if we were

together more than this. Since he recognized Emilia and Reus as his grandchildren, it couldn't be helped to see them as his adorable grandchildren. He completely fell in love with them.

"I'll say goodbye here, but before that, I must apologize to Emilia and Reus."  
(Garve)

"Apologize... for what?" (Reus)

"That's right. Did you do something, Ojii-chan?" (Emilia)

"Until the enemy was defeated, I didn't honestly admit that you guys were my grandchildren. Although I talked about family... I showed you a miserable appearance." (Garve)

As he started to see the siblings as his grandchildren, the thing that changed the most was that he started to call the siblings by their names.

The siblings were puzzled because of Garve's apology, but they soon smiled and approached him.

"We don't really mind, and we properly understand Ojii-chan's gentleness."  
(Emilia)

"Yes. When you said that you had showed a miserable appearance, that was because you saw us your family, right? Besides, Nee-chan this time is the most... hiiii!?" (Reus)

"Reus... we'll have a talk later. Anyway, you don't have to apologize, Ojii-chan." (Emilia)

"...Thank you. I am happy to have such good grandchildren. Please, show me your faces." (Garve)

Garve crouched a bit, he looked at the siblings' faces and narrowed his eyes.

"It was a short while, but it was a fun trip. Well, Reus..." (Garve)

"What is it, Jii-chan?" (Reus)

"Hold on to these." (Garve)

Garve suddenly took off the equipped mithril Tekkous and handed them over to Reus. It wasn't only the right side, which was handed to his son, but both

sides.

“You are a little short on defense. With these, they won’t become a hindrance when you hold a sword, right?” (Garve)

“But... these are Jii-chan’s weapon and Tou-chan’s memento...” (Reus)

Although these were use to hit something, the mithril Tekkous were originally armor, so there seemed to be no problems for Reus to wear them while swinging his greatsword.

These Tekkous, which were made from the rare mithril ore, could easily cost dozens of gold coins, and Reus was surprised, since Garve gave them away without any hesitation.

“I think that it is best for you to have them now. They are a gift from me and Felios... please, do not hesitate to receive them.” (Garve)

“Jii-chan... thank you.” (Reus)

Reus immediately put the equipment on, but it seemed that the Tekkous were slightly bigger and he had to adjusted them. But Reus was still growing, and it would be perfect after a while.

Reus, who had securely equipped the Tekkous by adjusting the padding, was happily striking his fists many times.

“Sorry, I have nothing to give Emilia.” (Garve)

“I don’t want anything, but would you give me something else?” (Emilia)

“...Is it something like this?” (Garve)

Emilia embraced Garve, who slightly lowered his waist and lightly bit his shoulder.

“I have enough when there is Ojii-chan. So, please, stay healthy until the next time we meet.” (Emilia)

“Aah... yes. I have to see your growth even more. Try to live long...” (Garve)

“Me too, Jii-chan!” (Reus)

Subsequently, Reus jumped to bite Garve and he had a face that looked like he would cry at any moment.

Still, Garve somehow endured it, he finally stroked the siblings' heads and turned his head.

"Sirius and Reese. Take care of my grandchildren." (Garve)

"Aah, leave it to me." (Sirius)

"You don't need to ask that." (Reese)

"...Thank you. Emilia and Reus. I will be looking forward to seeing you again."  
(Garve)

"Me too, Ojii-chan!" (Emilia)

"See you again, Jii-chan!" (Reus)

And then, Garve walked away without looking back.

We watched him, until he figured completely disappeared, and then we aimed for the next destination with the carriage.

With Reus polishing the Tekkous, Emilia was hugging my arms while sitting on the coach, and Reese shyly holding my hand, the carriage moved forward.

The aim was to find a town with an arena. If the information was widely spread, there was no way for us to get lost.

Thus... our trip started again.

— Garve —

Emilia and Reus.

My grandchildren, whom I met for the first time, were strong, and they had grown up. They were cute grandchildren and way too good for me.

It was lonely to separate from such grandchildren, but I couldn't afford to care for them when I was already old.

Besides... those kids had Hokuto, and above all, they had Sirius.

If there was such a guy who brought up my grandchildren, there was no need for me to be there. That was why I could send them off in peace.

Since I believed that I would meet my grandchildren again, I kept walking towards the settlement.



When I returned to the settlement where I was born and raised, everyone was pleased that I returned home safely.

I explained the situation of the settlement where my son lived to everyone. I also explained that I had built a memorial monument and had a proper mourning, and the people in the settlement had relieved smiles.

And I thought, again, that this was the place where I belonged.

Although it was only a few days, there was only one change of the situation in the settlement.

Just next to my house... there was a stone statue imitating Hokuto-sama, made in the place where he often slept. The statue had one of his feet raised, it was said that if a child touched the foot, they would receive the blessings from Hundred Wolves-sama.

The problem was that... food was occasionally put out as an offering. Didn't he say that he had problems dealing with this?

—

Several days later... an incident occurred in the settlement.

“Garve-san! Akura<sup>[2]</sup> is...!” (??)

Akura was the youngest boy among my disciples.

A few years ago... the husband of a young couple who lived in the settlement died one day protecting his son from monsters.

The left behind wife and son were very sad. The son who lost his father because of himself lamented his weak self. Although he still wanted to play, he became my disciple. That was Akura.

Even though I trained him hard, he had lost the enthusiasm... and apparently Akura turned out to be a Cursed Child.

It was said that there was a Cursed Child once in a lifetime, and by no means, I have seen it twice... No, I didn't expect to see it three times.

When I came to the scene, Akura, who had the figure of a Cursed Child, attacked me while crying.

When one became a Cursed Child, they displayed a tremendous power, but his movements were clumsy because he was a child, it was easy to neutralize him.

While looking over the overthrown Akura... I looked at the surroundings.

Everyone... was sad, especially Akura's mother. She was crying and hugging herself. It was her husband before this, and now, her only remaining son would be killed by the law. So the sorrow was immeasurable.

Akura, who was completely unable to move after he received a single blow from me, was looking up at me while suffering from fear.

"No... I don't want to die... I don't want to die..." (Akura)

While watching the crying Akura, who was pinned down on the ground, the Village Head poked my shoulder.

"Garve-san... let me do it. This is the job for the Village Head." (Village Head)

"No... I'll do it. " (Garve)

I lifted Akura's body up, and I looked into his face, which was crumpled with tears.

"No... if I die, Kaa-chan... will be alone." (Akura)

"Do you want to protect your mother?" (Garve)

"Because of me... Tou-chan is dead! That's why... instead of Tou-chan... I will protect... her." (Akura)

"If that's the case... I will take care of you." (Garve)

I hugged Akura, who had the figure of a Cursed Child, I reassuringly stroked his back.

Although the surroundings were getting noisy because of my behavior, I explained that my grandson, Reus, was a Cursed Child. He had a complete control when he transformed. Sirius knew it and also trained him.

The surroundings reactions were not bad.

Sirius taught various things to everyone in the settlement and gained their trust. It seemed they recalled the Cursed Child, Reus, who was smiling

innocently, and they were convinced.

“So, I will bring up Akura. If Akura becomes someone who kills our tribe... I will take responsibility for it.” (Garve)

There was no objection.

Even though it was a law, I overlooked it... but everyone acquiesced in my readiness.

Originally, I didn't want to kill my companion. This was probably an opportunity.

This was what I'd asked Sirius at that time and understood it.

What I missed was... the readiness.

“But Garve-san, as the head, the law is...” (Village Head)

The Village Head couldn't agree on that standpoint, since I was objecting it on the surface, I just rephrased what my grandchildren said.

“That rule is... nonsense.” (Garve)

I let out those words with a smile.

The settlement after that moment...

Later... in the settlement of the Silver Wolf tribe, Akura, brought up by Garve, became the next head of the settlement.

And Akura's mother, who had her son saved, served Garve from the bottom of her heart. They planned to have children after remarrying.

—

### **Extra/Bonus 1**

The conversation that couldn't be in the story. This bonus is a fiction. (Author)

“Uhhh, if Sirius-san is really horny... and he wanted it every day, what would you do if you couldn't stand up?” (Reese)

“That's a powerful love!” (Emilia)

“Yeah... that is so...” (Reese)

“Well then, what if Aniki hits and injures the one he likes?” (Reus)

“If it is Sirius-sama, whatever he does, I will change it to pleasure.” (Emilia)

“That is Aniki’s restricted ability!” (Reus)

“If Sirius was a woman... what would you do?” (Garve)

“I don’t mind it!” (Emilia)

“““She accepted that!?””” (Reese/Reus/Garve)

**Extra/Bonus 2**

Presenting Hokuto

※ Pin Pon Pan Pon...

I am very sorry, the ‘Presenting Hokuto’ today will not appear.

The reason is Hokuto-san’s schedule was too packed, as Sirius’ pet... model... CM shooting... this is a proof that he is busy every day.

We deeply apologize to all for causing such inconvenience.

That’s is... I got a comment from Hokuto-san, but it’s only one word, so I will post it here.

“Woof!” (Hokuto)

...Translation?

That will be a word thought about in everybody’s mind. (Newsreader)

---

**Notes**

- 1. XX is name for the settlement, but the author didn’t specify the name.
- 2. The name in raw is アクラ

# Intermission 2 – The Pilgrimage of an Old Man

---

“Uhhh... is it here?” (Lior)

A road that was made by an overwhelming force suddenly appeared in the thickly overgrown forest.

I came to the mansion where he used to live. It was a small house for nobles, but it was a nice place with a calm atmosphere.

“Oh? It is unusual for a visitor to come to this place.” (Valio)

I already noticed his presence. He was pruning the outside, and he spoke when he noticed me.

According to him, there was an old man, like a butler, that almost the same age as me managing the mansion. Could it be this man?

Since I surely looked suspicious, I had to explain first.

“You have a different air compared to a bandit. Did you get lost?” (Valio)

“I’m sorry, but you are... uhmm... I forgot the name. Anyway, I heard that there is a grave of a woman named Erina here, right?” (Lior) “Although that comes out of nowhere, shall we introduce ourselves first?” (Valio)

“Alright. I heard your name from Sirius, but I forgot it. Sorry.” (Lior)

He was looking at me suspiciously, but when I gave him Sirius’ name, he smiled and bowed. Hmm, there was no mistake that this man was someone whom I heard from him.

“If you are acquainted with Sirius-sama... I guess that I can understand your impressiveness. Nice to meet you, my name is Valio.” (Valio) “That’s right, that is the name. By the way, I am Ikki-Tousen. Call me Tousen.” (Lior/Tousen) “Tousen-sama... is it? So, what did you come here for?” (Valio)

“Hmmm. Actually, I came here to visit Erina’s grave.” (Lior)

“Would you come inside for the time being? We’ll go out after some tea.”  
(Valio)

“Ooh! Please, then. Although it wasn’t a big road, I am thirsty.” (Lior)

I couldn’t see him being cautious, but I knew that he was being careful, even if he showed his back to me. The impressiveness and the presence clad on his body were considerable. Well, his muscles weren’t overwhelming, though. It was possible for him to become a strong warrior if he was trained, so it’s not worthy to feel obscure. More importantly, if it’s about tea, let’s definitely have some.

“I see. Hearing you talk about Sirius-sama and the juniors, and about visiting Erina’s grave... Thank you so much for doing this for her.” (Valio) I explained the reason why I came here while eating the snacks and drinking the prepared tea, since I had no reason to hide.

Nevertheless, the cookies and tea made by this man were delicious. They weren’t up to the level of Sirius’ and his attendants’, but I could taste his skills.

He was grateful because I came here to visit her grave, but since I came on my own, I thought that there was no need to thank me.

“If it wasn’t because of that Erina, I would not have met that guy. I would like to personally give my thanks before the grave.” (Lior) “...You seem to be a very frank person, aren’t you? Understood, let me guide you. Will you be heading there soon?” (Valio) “Alright. Since I can go at any time, will that be alright for you?” (Lior)

“Please, leave it to me. I’ll get ready right away.” (Valio)

Since it still hadn’t pass midday yet, if everything went well, I would be able to go to the town by nightfall.

And, with the guidance of Valio, who finished the preparation while holding various tools, we went towards Erina’s grave.

—

When we entered the mountain from the back of the mansion, the trees and weeds were naturally growing thick, but there was a way for people to pass.

Although it could be seen only as an animal trail, I saw traces of obstructive trees being cut. This was obviously done by the hand of a person who entered this place before.

“Hmmm... it’s easy to walk through.” (Lior)

“It seemed that it was maintained when Sirius-sama lived here. Nonetheless, it is difficult to notice it without being aware of it.” (Valio) “Huhuhu, that guy’s done well, hasn’t he?” (Lior)

After we walked on the mountain road awhile, we suddenly came to an opened space where the forest was cleared and the flowers bloomed. Hmmm... this place was also a good place.

We stepped into the flower garden, and in the center of it, there was an impressive presence coming from the base of a huge tree.

“That is Erina’s grave. But, will you please wait a moment? I won’t be long, since I just want to do some cleaning.” (Valio) “I want to help, but I will damage the stone. So, I will patiently wait.” (Lior)

I decided to lie down around the area and wait until the cleaning was over.

While having the leisurely air brush against my cheeks, I remembered the matter told to me by the boy whom I taught ‘Single Strike Ultimate Destruction Sword Style’ in the past. The boy certainly said that he fought a big tortoise that was as hard as a rock in this flower garden.

I heard that Sirius was, somehow, able to overturn the turtle and that made its weakness appear, where the boy stabbed it, but... if it was me, I would cut it into two by slashing from the front.

It couldn’t be helped, since the boy was a child at that time, but now that several years had passed since then, it would be natural to cut it in two, if it was at the level of rocks. By the way, if he couldn’t do it, I planned to cut him into two.

When I was vaguely thinking about the growth of the boy, Valio had finished cleaning, so I took out some wine from my belongings and ask for his permission.

“I heard that Erina liked to drink wine, is it alright if I put this on the grave?” (Lior) “It is alright, but... where did you get that?” (Valio)

“Hmmm? When I asked for the most expensive wine in the nearby town, they gave me this. Hey, drink it to your heart’s content.” (Lior) “Th-that wine is worth of ten god coins... aah!?” (Valio)

I sprinkled the wine on the grave, but Valio was strangely noisy. You’re not going to say it’ll give a stinky smell with a bottle of wine, right?

I turned around after pouring everything inside, and Valio was staring at me.

“What’s with that face? Aah, if it’s not enough, I have a spare...” (Lior)

“Th-that’s good enough! Rather, I would like for you to drink that...” (Valio)

“Welll... I actually drank a bottle before coming, but it was too refined for me. Since I don’t need it anymore, I’ll give it to you.” (Lior) “W-what!?” (Valio)

I gave the wine to Valio, I stood up in front of the grave again and lowered my head.

I haven’t met you even once, but... knowing that Sirius had an extraordinary strength, I respect you, who diligently brought him up, pouring your love and kept watching over him.

And since you were there, I met Sirius, who revived me.

So, there was only one word that I wanted to say.

“...Thank you.” (Lior)

After I finished giving my deepest appreciation, I stood up and turned my back to the grave.

“...Is this alright?” (Valio)

“Hmmm. There is no need for an outsider like me to bother too much. A word of appreciation will be enough.” (Lior) “Understood. Well then, let’s head back.” (Valio)

An old man like me would trouble him if I prayed for too long.

Following Valio, who walked out with a bit of a smile, I left Erina’s grave.



—  
“Ooh... you are the owner of that mansion now?” (Lior)

“That’s right. The Galgan Company sold it cheaply to me.” (Valio)

Valio and I were walking while chatting, and the subject of the chat was about the ownership of that mansion.

Originally, the owner of the mansion was Sirius’ father... No, it seemed he was a foolish noble; but, apparently, the financial capability of that foolish noble was dwindling, and he had to sell that mansion to the Galgan Company.

And then, Valio, who served that foolish noble as an attendant for many years, quit, and it seemed that he bought the mansion from the Galgan Company in order to spend the rest of his life in peace.

“Although it is away from the town, it is a good place to live leisurely. Besides... it is my role to watch over her tomb.” (Valio) Hmm... it looked like he was asked to do that. Looking from his figure, he didn’t look very strong, and there was a possibility of being attacked by something, but I wouldn’t say anything about it.

While I was convinced with that alone, I came back to where I could see the mansion. However, I felt something disturbing, so I grabbed Valio’s shoulder and stopped him.

“...Hold it. I feel the presence of people in the mansion.” (Lior)

“There is nothing here, and the adventurers rarely visit this place. There is a possibility of thieves, but... do you know how many of them?” (Valio) “No more than ten.” (Lior)

“If so, the possibility of thieves seems to be high. It is fine if the mansion only has food, but I’ll be bothered if this beautiful mansion is laid to waste.” (Valio) If it was about fighting, it was going to be my turn. I confirmed by feeling my partner, the greatsword, on my back... I went in front of Valio, and turned to him.

“Let me see, this is as my gratitude. I wonder if I should go for a moment and blow them away.” (Lior) “...What? Ummm, Tousen-sama doesn’t have to fight. It

will be fine if you go to the town and call for the guards.” (Valio) “It’s troublesome. My stomach is hungry for competition, so I will forcibly blow them away. I won’t damage the mansion, so you don’t have to worry.” (Lior) “Tousen-sama!?” (Valio)

Ignoring Valio’s words, I left the space of many trees, and headed for the presence in front of the entrance of the mansion.

What was in front of the entrance was a suspicious group wearing good-looking weapons and armors. From the quality of the equipment, it was a group that couldn’t be seen amongst advanced adventurers; so, judging from my intuition that I had been using to hunt thieves all the time, there was no mistake that they were thieves.

Among the group, there was a man who had a different presence. The man was unusually fat and he wasn’t good enough to play bandit. He looked like a noble that I didn’t like.

“Bardomyl-sama?” (Valio)

“Oo! Where were you, Valio?” (Bardomyl)

Valio, who came after me, was surprised to see that fat man. Hmm... it seemed that he knew Valio.

“I had something to do in the forest. Leaving that aside, what kind of business do you have here?” (Valio) “Uhhh, well, that depends on you. I want to lend this mansion to these people.” (Bardomyl) A noble named Bardomyl or ‘Meaty’ referred to the men he had around him, but Valio shook his head and said it clearly.

“I refuse. Because I am no longer your servant.” (Valio)

“Wha!? W-weren’t you a servant who had supported my household? Although you did quit, as your former Master, you should listen to me!” (Bardomyl) “My Master was your father. By the way, who are these people?” (Valio)

“They are some recently rising thieves, and they are my new colleagues. I am planning to make this mansion into their base and play an active part.” (Bardomyl) “...Have you fallen that far?!” (Valio)

Valio was exclaiming, but I was getting troubled.

In other words, they were planning to make this mansion, which was away from areas where people lived, as a base and commit thefts from the surrounding roads?

“The pride of a noble no longer exists within you, huh?” (Valio)

“I need money more than pride! You better look at the equipment of these guys. If a powerful person has equipment at this level, they won’t lose against guards and adventurers, right?” (Bardomyl) “It is certainly true that those are wonderful equipments... but aren’t they thieves? Since it’s still not too late, please rethink this.” (Valio) “Shut up! I am already understaffed. The women are almost running away, and my son has left the house. And the only things left are an annoying woman who wants valuables, overstocked magic tools, and my house. And you are no more, so what are you going to say to me!?” (Bardomyl) “I have advised you not to do so, but you didn’t listen, did you? Everything is your own fault.” (Valio) Valio seemed to be a former attendant of this meaty noble, but I completely gave up, since I could no longer see the need to restrain myself.

Although he said that, the meaty noble was persistently stuck to Valio.

“Even if it was my own mistake, it won’t be a problem if it makes me money! With these mithril-made weapons, the adventurers and monsters in this area won’t be their opponents. They are free to plunder!” (Bardomyl) I was thinking that they had very good-looking weapons... so those were mithril made? They were a bunch who lacked muscles and had good weapons made of mithril, but you didn’t question that matter?

Maybe because Valio had a similar thoughts, he was sighing at the words from the meaty noble.

“Even if they are mithril-made equipments, there is no guarantee that the person himself is strong. Let me ask you a question. Do you really think that they can win against a strong man like Sirius-sama?” (Valio) “Well, that monster is not here anymore. And he is a rare monster in the first place!” (Bardomyl) “Monster!? Although he has severed his relationship with you, isn’t he still your son?” (Valio) “He is not my son! That monster... I don’t want to see him

anymore!” (Bardomyl)

The moment Sirius’ name was said, that meaty noble trembled and his face turned blue.

Although I was bothered with various things... I was about to confirm some things, so I pat Valio’s shoulder and turned him around.

“I have a question. Is he Sirius’ father?” (Lior)

“Yes, he is. Are you aware about him breaking off their relationship?” (Valio)

“I have heard about it to a certain extent. In other words, he was the one who made Erina suffer, right?” (Lior) “Oi, who is this old man!? Is he your acquaintance?” (Bardomyl)

Meaty was staring with a slightly frustrated expression because I interrupted him, but he was frightened and closed his mouth when I turned around.

“So, am I right?” (Lior)

“That’s right. He is the person who hated such a gentle lady.” (Valio)

“Hmm, if that’s so, there is no need for me to hold back.” (Lior)

In the first place, since I hated nobles like him, I definitely had no plans to restrain myself.

When I came forward, the meaty noble got scared and retreated, and the surrounding thieves were drawing their weapons and got ready.

“What are you doing, Valio? Deal with this old man quickly! You, who had serve my household, dare to disobey me!?” (Bardomyl) “As I said before, I clearly said this when I left Bardomyl-sama’s mansion. I am not a person who will serve you anymore...” (Valio) “Guhh... I intended to keep you alive, but it can’t be helped then. Oi, do it!” (Bardomyl) With the command from Meaty, the ten thieves wielded their weapons towards me, but... they were full of gaps. By just having good-looking weapons, I couldn’t feel the strength that the meaty noble was so proud of.

Valio, who stood behind me, was instinctively sighing, he grasped his fists and took a battle stance.

“I am not that good in a fight, but I also will help. If it’s one or two, I can somehow...” (Valio) “There’s no need for you to help. Just stay put, and it will be immediately over!” (Lior) I kicked the ground, jumped forward, and swung my partner at the nearest thieves.

Normally, I would cut their bodies in two, but thinking about the place this time, I struck the opponents with the body of the sword instead of slashing them.

After sensing the breaking bones of the thieves from my partner, I could barely confirm the appearance of the thieves, who flew away, above the forest.

“...” (Dumbfounded Group)

“Hmmm... they flew far, huh?” (Lior)

The surroundings of the mansion would be dirtied if I slashed the thieves here. So the method to deal with them was to blow the thieves far away. Since I broke their bones and blew them away into the depths of the forest, there was little possibility of them being alive.

While all the surrounding people, including Valio, were stunned, I was satisfied with their reactions. Cutting them in half would be the best, but it wasn’t bad to let them know the name.

According to him, this was called ‘Home Run’ or something.

“Hahaha! Come, come at me! If you come... I will do it! Next will be a Home Run!” (Lior) Shouting out those words made me feel good.

I blew off the thieves one after another; but, of course, some of them tried to resist with their weapons. Well, their good-looking weapons couldn’t stand the blow of my partner and broke, and there was no change to being blown away by me.

I finished blowing away all of the thieves, and then, I stood before the remaining meaty noble.

“Are there no more thieves? I want to beat several times more.” (Lior)

“Wha... that can’t be!? Those guys had mithril-made weapons...” (Bardomy)

“Those were made from Mithril, huh?” (Lior)

I picked up the weapon that fell when I blew a thief away. I stood in front of the meaty noble, who was retreating to the back. And then, I grabbed the tip and the handle of the sword and used my strength. The sword, then, made a dull sound, and I broke the sword in front of the meaty noble.

In other words, the thieves' appearances were merely a bluff.

"This looks like a fake. I would not be able to break it if it's the real thing."  
(Lior) "Uhh... That's a lie... My last chance... with fakes..." (Bardomyl)

It seemed he was driven into a corner, to the point of being cheated with fakes. He looked miserable, but... it didn't matter to me.

"Well, next is your turn. An arm or a leg... which one you want me to cut off?"  
(Lior) "Do you think that a mere adventurer can lay their hands on a noble!?"  
(Bardomyl)

"Eh, sorry, sorry, I couldn't listen well. I am an old man, anyways. So... is it your arm?" (Lior) "Hi...hiiiiiii—!?" (Bardomyl)

The meaty noble boarded a carriage that seemed to be used to come here. He ordered the coachman to run away.

It was troublesome to waste him here, so I just confirmed that the carriage was escaping and turned to Valio.

"It is alright now, so I will take my leave. Although it was a short while, thank you for taking care of me." (Lior) "I am saved but... will this be alright? The opponent was, more or less, a noble, and if you leave him alone, there's the possibility of him making you into a wanted person..." (Valio) "I am not boasting, but I don't mind fighting nobles here and there. I am used to it, anyway." (Lior) "It was safe here, until now..." (Valio)

I was crushing foolish nobles only, and my reputation wasn't bad, since I exterminated thieves along the way. Even if somebody tried to get involved, it was all settled with the sword.

"There is no need for you to worry. Besides..." (Lior)

"Besides...?" (Valio)

"I... haven't said anything about them escaping." (Lior)

—

The next day... I awoke in a bed of an inn.

Yesterday, I came to a certain town after going to Valio's mansion, and stayed in this hotel after some training.

"Hmm... I'm sleepy." (Lior)

I got up from the bed and warmed up my body. And then, I came to the dining area of the inn to eat breakfast. I called for a waitress and ordered.

"Give me everything on this menu." (Lior)

"Eh?" (Waitress)

They were surprised every time I asked for meals like this... was it that unusual?

While I ate the meals that were being carried out one after another, several rumors could be heard from the adventurers who stayed in the same inn as me.

The most noticeable rumor among them was the rumor about a certain noble's mansion having been destroyed.

The mansion was sliced into two, and a part of the mansion was shattered into small pieces by a tremendous force. The noble, which was the owner of the mansion, was buried within the wreckage, but it seemed he had, somehow, survived. And the criminal was... unknown.

"He had a strong case of bad luck, huh..." (Lior)

"Hmm? Did you say something?" (Waitress)

"No, it's nothing. Well, is the next dish ready yet?" (Lior)

"Oops, it is. Yes, I kept you waiting for the next dish!" (Waitress)

By the way, I was training nearby the meaty noble's mansion.

I made a little mistake by unleashing slashing attacks with waves, and they flew towards the mansion... I didn't aim for it though!

"Well... it's a little bit more to Elysion." (Lior)

To dispel the gloomy feeling, I didn't feel like caring about what happened to

that meaty noble anymore. So, after I finished eating, I left for Elysion.

—

A few days later... I arrived at Elysion.

The reason for me to come here was to see the stubborn old man who made my partner, [Crimson Lotus].

As a weapon, it was still reliable and as robust as ever, but I recently felt that something was wrong. Whatever it was, I thought that I wanted to show it to him at least once, so I expressly came all the way to the place of that stubborn old man.

Assembling the information based on the appearance's features, I tried to locate his shop, but... the name was lengthy, with something like destruction or indestructible. It seemed his poor naming sense didn't change, after all.

However, if you add 'fool' at the end of the name, it would be the perfect name.

"When I thought that I felt this presence somewhere... is that you, idiot!?" (Grant)

When I was looking at the signboard, a small, short legged, stubborn old man came out from the store. Let alone the naming sense, his appearance didn't change at all.

"You're loud as usual, huh? Look, I came to show you my sword." (Lior)

"You also haven't change! Isn't it supposed to be, 'Please look at it', you idiot!" (Grant) "Noisy! I'm saying that the sword, that you made, feels weird!" (Lior)

"Haa!? I made it to fit you, so it's not weird, you idiot! If there is nothing, I'll go back and start hitting with my hammer, you idiot!" (Grant) "It is superb! Do what you can do!" (Lior)

He was an annoying fellow, but in regards of the sword, he was a reliable and stubborn old man. When I told him about the uncomfortable feeling, he invited me into the shop while wondering about it, and he started looking at the sword.

He lightly hit the sword directly with a hammer, but the stubborn old man



only tilted his head.

“Hmmm... as expected of my masterpiece. There is a place where the blade chipped a bit, but the whole thing is not really distorted. What is weird about this, you idiot!?” (Grant) “It’s because the sword feels light.” (Lior)

“It feels light because you have become stronger, you idiot! What is going on with your body!?” (Grant) “Hmm, I just found a goal. Not just power, but I am also learning various techniques. So, I want the center of gravity to be closer. Fix it immediately.” (Lior) “Fix it immediately!? It will take, at least, a few months, you idiot!” (Grant)

“Hmm... there is no other way then.” (Lior)

Because there was no compromise in regards of weapons.

When I was looking for a replacement sword while waiting for my partner to be reborn again, I remembered an important matter.

“Oh, yeah!? Oi, old man! Did a human named Sirius and some Silver Wolfkin siblings come here?” (Lior) “Haa? Yeah, they came, you idiot. There were a man whom I took care of in various ways, a cheeky child and a cute granddaughter.” (Grant) “Uhhh, they really came. So, did you give good weapons to Emilia?” (Lior)

Since Sirius already had a splendid weapon, I wrote in a letter, asking him to give Emilia some good weapons. That boy... whatever was good for him.

“Idiot! I sold the best knife I made for five silver coins!” (Grant)

“What!?” (Lior)

I instinctively slapped the desk. The desk broke by that slap, but it wasn’t so much.

“Why did you receive the money!? You should’ve said to keep it as pocket money since you already had enough!” (Lior) “Idiot! I said that, but she refused! She was a straightforward and cute girl!” (Grant) “Of course she is! That’s because she is my granddaughter!” (Lior)

“She is not your granddaughter, you idiot!” (Grant)

And then, the discussion between the stubborn old man and I continued with

fists. It was settled with Emilia being our granddaughter.

I felt that my intuition caught something strange, but... I didn't mind.

—

[An alternative sword!? You conceited idiot!] (Grant)

Even though he said that, I was given a weapon that was similar to an iron lump, which resembled a sword, from him. Its weight was no different from my partner, so the feeling of shouldering it wasn't bad. However, since it had no blade, it was close to a blunt weapon.

Although I attracted unusual gazes, I was walking around the town while looking for a shop, without worrying about them.

"If I'm not wrong, he said something about Gal Company." (Lior)

Dee and Noel, whom I met before, recommended that company to me.

Since I heard that he lent his skills, creating variety of dishes for that company, I thought that there must be something that would surprise me.

I saw a signboard that said "Galgan Company" after searching for a short while. It was a store that had an unusual and different air compared to the other buildings.

"Hmm... This looks like the place." (Lior)

There were many customers in the store, and I could see the sight of them buying goods that were written as "Essentials for Travel". But, I felt more interested with the neighboring building.

When I checked the signboard, it seemed like a restaurant with meals and teas. I was going to this place just because I was hungry.

"Hello. Welcome to Galgan Cafe. Is it for one person?" (Waitress)

When I entered the store, which was written as... the birthplace of cake or something, I was guided inside by a waitress in a maid dress.

Either because the time was good, or not crowded, I was able to sit down at a table without waiting. And when I was handed a menu and read it all the way, I decided to order as usual, for the time being.

“I want all the dishes and cakes on this menu. I don’t mind the order, I want you to prepare the things that you can do.” (Lior) “Certainly.” (Waitress)

“...Ooh.” (Lior)

A voice of admiration unconsciously leaked out.

I had ordered like this in various shops so far, and they certainly asked again, since it was impossible for them, and they would try to stop me.

On the contrary, this store accepted the order without asking again. That guy had, indeed, lent his hand here.

Well... weren’t they a bit too used to it? I had a feeling that... they frequently had this kind of order.

While I was in doubt, the waitress started to arrange the cakes on my table.

“To begin with, here is the store-boasted cake set. Please wait for the other dishes awhile.” (Waitress) They were the same cakes that Dee made, but... they were smaller. Dee and that guy would make were big round cakes, but the cakes that I ordered from this store were in small pieces.

I used a fork and ate it in one bite, but I was still satisfied with it. The taste wasn’t bad.

“Hmm... it’s not enough. Sorry, can you bring more of these?” (Lior)

I ordered again from a waitress who was walking nearby, and when I was drinking a hot tea...

“Good grief... Eat cake more elegantly, you know?” (??)

I heard such words from nearby... but that voice made me unusually irritated.

When I turned around to glare at him, there was a young man at the next table who could be found anywhere, and a man who appeared to have a certain ability sitting on a chair.

The voice just now came from the unfamiliar young man, but... I completely noticed that voice, even if I wanted to forget it.

That was known as a supernatural magic, and there was no difference from that abnormal elf magician. His appearance was different, but if it was him, he

could do it. Perhaps, he was disguised with magic or tools.

“You bastard... what are you doing here?” (Lior)

“Can’t you see? I am having cake. Unlike you, I’m elegant, don’t you think?” (Rodwell) “That is elegant? You just used magic like an idiot, and you call that elegant?” (Lior) “That’s rude. It was my mistake to use the word ‘elegant’ for you, whom has no brain but a sword. Let me apologize.” (Rodwell) We were smiling, but since we were staring at each other while releasing bloodlust, the surrounding waitresses and customers were getting away from us when I noticed them.

“Do you think that is enough of an apology? My eye was badly injured because of your magic! Aren’t you a fool for suddenly dropping a mountain?!” (Lior) I couldn’t forget it.

That was a few years ago... At that time, I was participating to crush some groups of thieves at the request of the guild.

This guy dropped a mountain-like rock from above when I attacked them. I cut a part of the rock to avoid it, but if it was done poorly, I would’ve been killed.

“Was it not because you charged in on your own without listening to the strategy? And because of you, I couldn’t wipe out all of the thieves, maybe you’re the one who should apologize?” (Rodwell) “It was weird to drop a mountain on thieves! Don’t do magical experiments on the thieves, do it somewhere else!” (Lior) “I don’t need to say that you were killing them while laughing.” (Rodwell)

“What!?” (Lior)

“Alright... shall we settle this?” (Rodwell)

The cup he placed on the table had started to subtly vibrate because of our bloodlust, and then I picked up the piece of iron, which was the substitute for my partner.

This opponent would not be easy with this weapon, but I would be able to do it at this distance.

“W-wait a minute, Magna-san! I haven’t eat the cake yet, so I want you to stop that!” (Rodwell) “Impossible. I will be killed if I unskillfully intervene.” (Magna)

Other customers were getting noisy because they were driven out, the moment I took a step forward to push this iron lump against him... a woman came in between us.

“Yeah, yeah, let’s stop at that. This is not outside, but inside the shop, so if you act violently, you won’t be able to come here again, you know.” (??) Normally, I didn’t mind attacking, but the woman, who interrupted me, had power and dignity that made me unintentionally stop my feet.

I had, somehow, calmed down and when I separated my hand from the iron lump, he also stood down and sat back in his chair.

“Yeah, that’s good! If you want to have a go, please do it outside of the town. Ojii-sama too, you were also being immature.” (Lifell) “I have displayed an embarrassing figure.” (Rodwell)

“...The Jou-chan is right. Thank you for stopping me.” (Lior)

“Hi-hime-sama—...no, please stop interrupting this situation!” (Melt)

“I can’t do my job if I am frightened by this degree. Aah, the order? Three sets of cakes.” (Lifell) “U-understood... ” (Melt)

Hooo...She was a dignified and strong-willed Jou-chan, huh?

An ordinary person would run away, but rather than just interrupting us, she casually sat on a chair and placed an order.

“Ojii-sama, also, let’s eat cake without having a fight. This is a precious break for us.” (Lifell) “That’s right. Well then, Magna, quickly take that one whole cake. I will never forgive you for eating alone.” (Rodwell) I didn’t really understand, but this Jou-chan seemed to know that foolish elf. She wasn’t afraid of our bloodlust... she didn’t seem to be an ordinary person.

The surroundings also regained its calmness, starting with the Jou-chan, who happily ate the cakes. Since I had sat on a chair and the dishes had arrived, I decided to focus on the meals for the time being.

When I enjoyed the dishes that were unexpectedly delicious, even though they weren't at Dee's level, the Jou-chan from earlier sat in front of me. In the vicinity, there were two who appeared to be that Jou-chan's attendants; a female rabbitkin, and a young man who didn't have enough muscles.

"Hmmm... what is it? Was it because the commotion earlier was bad?" (Lior)

"I didn't really mind about that commotion. Actually, I'd like to ask you something." (Lifell) "If it's alright to answer while I'm eating, that's fine, then." (Lior)

"Thank you very much. I heard from the person who was indulging in cakes over there. Are you the famous Lior-sama?" (Lifell) The part when she mentioned my name wasn't heard by the surroundings, so I decided to nod obediently. Since she had heard it from that elf, I thought that there was no need to conceal that fact.

"Although the name matches, that is not my name at the moment. My name is Ikki-Tousen. I want you to call me Tousen." (Lior) "Well then, Tousen-sama. My name is Lifell, and I am the royal princess of Elysion. To tell you the truth, I want to ask a favor." (Lifell) "...I dislike royalty and nobility. So, I don't want to hear it." (Lior)

When I had a bothered face, the Jou-chan named Lifell took out a bell from her pocket and rang it. And then a large roasted meat and a cake, which hadn't sliced yet, were brought together from the kitchen and lined up in front of me.

"Please help yourself, you don't have to hold back. It is good enough even if you just listen to the talk." (Lifell) "...Fine. I will only listen, so don't ask anything." (Lior)

"Thank you very much. The talk is simple. I want you to teach the people in the castle the way of using the sword. Of course, the reward will be amazing." (Lifell) "Is that it? It's troublesome..." (Lior)

"Alright then, you can just do a simulated battle. I want the castle guards to directly experience the strength of Tousen-sama. Because experience is important." (Lifell) "Hoo... I got it. There is a possibility that I might break the opponents, you know?" (Lior) "We are well aware of that, and the opponents of Tousen-sama really desire it. Actually, Melt, who is next to me, also wants it."

(Lifell) “I want to become strong to protect this person. Tousen-sama, will you consider it?” (Melt) This man... didn’t have sufficient muscles, but the determination in his eyes were considerable. He resembled that small boy who tried to surpass me for that purpose.

“I want the people in the castle taught at least once by the strongest man in the world. If there are troublesome nobles, they will be immediately silenced, so will that be alright?” (Lifell) “I’m not the strongest in the world anymore...” (Lior)

I wasn’t the strongest in the world when I was defeated by Sirius. And he didn’t claim that title, he just left it vacant, but... would that be troublesome to explain?

Besides, when I think about it, I still have to wait for my partner to be fixed... so should I go to the castle to spend my time?

“Well... alright. Are you going to take the responsibility?” (Lior)

“Thank you very much. Although this is too quick, I will also explain about the future schedules...” (Lifell) “Since that old man has low intelligence other than a sword, it will be useless to explain. It is good enough if you just give him meals again as a reward.” (Rodwell) “What did you say!? You also looked happy when it comes to magic, aren’t you!? The face that you had when you tested the magic at that time was deplorable!” (Lior) “You too have a sloppy face when you swing a sword. By all means, show that disillusion to the soldiers of the castle.” (Rodwell) “...Want to have a go?” (Lior)

“Shall we?” (Rodwell)

“Yeah, yeah, stop it right there.” (Lifell)

When the elf and I stood up, the Jou-chan intervened once again, but unlike earlier, both of us were totally unwilling.

This time, when I grabbed my partner and I couldn’t be stopped anymore... inexcusable words came out from the Jou-chan.

“My sister has a friend named Emilia, and... she told us a bit about Tousen-san, is that right, Senia?” (Lifell) “Yeah. She told me that you are a strong and kind-hearted Ojii-san. And if a fight with such a person happened in the town...”

(Senia) “Besides, there is a new cake recipe that Sirius-kun thought of in the letter that I received the other day. That’s too bad, Ojii-sama.” (Lifell) ““...”” (Lior/Rodwell)

The elf and I were silently shaking hands.

I thought of squeezing his hand, but I am a gentle Ojii-san. I’ll forgive you today.

Thus, while I’m leaving my partner behind, I ended up playing with the soldiers of Elysion.

And after I get my partner back, I would immediately go after Sirius and Emilia.

Boy... did you properly expect that?

Wait for me!

Later... the days when screams could be heard from the castle continued for several days.

—

---

## Extra

During [The Reformation of the Silver Wolf Tribe], the parents were...

“...Emilia has finally overcome it.” (Erina)

“Yeah. It seems that Sirius also took the opportunity, so it turned out well, I guess? Hehe, she looks really happy. I’m jealous.” (Aria) “Since I entrusted everything to Emilia, that girl will continue to support Sirius-sama.” (Erina) “Yes, that was a good response. As expected of a child brought up by Erina.” (Aria) “Thank you very much.” (Erina)

“Excuse me...” (??)

“Ooh? Aren’t you Emilia’s and Reus’...” (Aria)

“Nice to meet you, my name is Rona. This time your son and our...” (Rona)

“Aah, no need, no need. You don’t have to use honorifics. Everyone here is



equal. Because this is just a place to watch the children. By the way, please call me Aria.” (Aria) “Please call me Erina. Would you like to have some tea?” (Erina)

“Tea!? Ooh... yes, please.” (Rona)

“Anyway, that person who stumbled over his knees over there, is he alright?” (Aria) “You do not need to worry. Because he’s just unable to accept that his daughter was taken by Sirius-kun. Hey, isn’t she looking really happy? How long are you going to be frustrated?” (Rona) “Uhhh... I’m sorry about my boy.” (Aria)

“No... instead of just saving your daughter and son, he is a gentle child who will make them happy. He knows that, but, after all...” (Erina) “I think that he will recovered soon; so, please, leave him alone. Leaving that aside, we have something that we want to tell you, Aria-san.” (Rona) “What is it?” (Aria)

“Thank you for giving birth to such a wonderful child. Since Sirius was there, we were able to disappear with confidence. And Erina-san...” (Rona) “Yes?” (Erina)

“Thank you very much for loving our children. On the contrary, you gave Emilia a new goal.” (Rona) “...That’s incorrect. I used your child for my own self-satisfaction.” (Erina)

“No, even if it was, when looking at their happy faces, I don’t think that was a mistake.” (Rona) “Yeah! That’s why they are good with each other.” (Aria)

“Yeah... right. Leaving that matter aside, shall we watch the children together?” (Erina) “No... We already had enough. We’re going to disappear like this.” (Rona)

“Yeah... you’re satisfied, aren’t you?” (Aria)

“Yes. The children are already adults, and it will be alright if we leave them to Sirius-kun.” (Rona) “Is that so? It’s weird to say ‘please take care’... so goodbye.” (Aria)

“Ahaha, I certainly do not know what to say. Hey, how long are you going to be like that? Say something.” (Rona) “Aah... yes. My wife has said everything that I wanted to say, and I’m also grateful. Sirius-kun is a wonderful child.” (Felios) “Hehe... of course, that’s because he is my child. Well then, goodbye.”

(Aria)

““Yes.”” (Rona/Felios)

“They have gone now.” (Erina)

“Yeah. By the way, Erina. Are you going to move on?” (Aria)

“Are you kidding me? I still have to watch over Sirius.” (Erina)

“Me too. Besides, that child is doing a lot of things, so I won’t get tired of watching him.” (Aria) “Exactly, but I think that he will face a slightly dangerous situation soon.” (Erina) “Aah, isn’t that natural when he is on an adventure? Besides, since he said that he wanted to become an educator, I wonder when he will settle down?” (Aria) “That will be good. If he settles down, we will soon see a child born.” (Erina)

“Yeah. Since there are two bride candidates, I’m sure it will be right away.” (Aria) “Grandchildren... is it?” (Erina)

“Yeah. They will look cute.” (Aria)

“Yes. They will.” (Erina)

“I’m looking forward to it.” (Aria)

“Me too.” (Erina)

# Credits

---

Author	—	Kouichi Neko
Publication platform	—	None
Publisher	—	Overlap
Translator	—	<a href="#">bayabuscotranslation</a>
Editor	—	Dogboy90
EPUB by	—	Armaell's Library